A Study of Some Atmospherically Important Molecules and Reactions using Photoelectron Spectroscopy

By

Grant Copeland

September 2011
“...a joke is a very serious thing...”

Winston Churchill
Declaration of Authorship

I, Grant Copeland, declare that this thesis entitled “A Study of Atmospherically Important Molecules and Reactions using Photoelectron Spectroscopy” and the work presented therein is my own. I confirm that:

- This work was done wholly or mainly while in candidature for a research degree at Southampton University.
- Where any part of this thesis has previously been submitted for a degree or any other qualification at Southampton University or any other institution, this has been clearly stated.
- Where I have consulted the published work of others, this is always clearly attributed.
- Where I have quoted from the work of others, the source is always given. With the exception of such quotations, this thesis is entirely my own work.
- I have acknowledged all main sources of help.
- Where the thesis is based on work done by myself and/or jointly with others, I have made clear exactly what was done by others and to what I have contributed myself.

Recent Publications


Signed:

Date:
Abstract

Faculty of Engineering, Science and Mathematics
School of Chemistry

Doctor of Philosophy

A Study of Some Atmospherically Important Molecules and Reactions Using Photoelectron Spectroscopy

by

Grant Copeland

The main objective of the work reported in this thesis was to investigate molecules of atmospheric importance and their reactions. This has been achieved using spectroscopic methods, notably photoelectron spectroscopy, u.v.-visible spectroscopy and infrared spectroscopy, as well as kinetics simulations, global modelling and quantum chemical calculations.

Photoelectron spectroscopy (PES) was used to investigate the pyrolysis behaviour of two hydrofluorocarbon (HFC) fire suppression agents, pentafluoroethane (CF$_3$CHF$_2$) and 2-H heptafluoropropane (CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$) to determine their thermal decomposition pathways. The thermal decomposition of flowing pentafluoroethane (CF$_3$CHF$_2$) diluted in argon was studied over the temperature range 600-1600 °C. At lower temperatures, (< 1000 °C) there is evidence of production of the thermal decomposition products C$_2$F$_4$ and HF and at higher temperatures (over 1000 °C) the decomposition products CF$_2$ and CF$_3$H are observed. The adiabatic and vertical ionisation energy (AIE and VIE) have been measured for the first band of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ from the recorded photoelectron spectrum as (12.71 ± 0.05) eV and (13.76 ± 0.02) eV respectively. The main pathways for decomposition have been established over the temperature range investigated.

Pyrolysis of 2-H heptafluoropropane (CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$), at low pressure, diluted in argon, has been studied over the temperature range 600-2000 °C. Comparison of the results
obtained has been made with results of recent electronic structure calculations of possible decomposition pathways. The most favoured reaction thermodynamically, to produce CF₃CF=CF₂ + HF, is found to be the main decomposition reaction at lower temperatures, 600-900 °C. At higher temperatures, 900-1200 °C, decomposition gave C₂F₄ + CF₃H and it was found that C₃F₆ decomposes to C₂F₄ + CF₂, and C₂F₄ decomposes to CF₂ at temperatures above 1400 °C.

Three ozone-alkene reactions (O₃ + ethene, O₃ + 2-methylpropene (2MP) and O₃ + 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene (DMB)) were separately investigated, each at low pressure, using a flow-tube interfaced to a photoelectron spectrometer. Photoelectron spectra, recorded as a function of reaction time, have been used to estimate partial pressures of the reagents and products, using photoionisation cross-sections for selected photoelectron bands of the reagents and products, (which have been measured separately) for each reaction. The yields of all the main products have been determined for each reaction. For each reaction, oxygen was observed as a product for the first time and for the O₃ + ethene reaction acetaldehyde was measured as a product for the first time. Kinetics simulations were performed using reaction schemes which were developed for these reactions in order to determine the main reactions for production of the observed products.

A feasibility study was carried out on the first PE bands of four selected non-linear triatomic molecules, SF₂, HO₂, HOCl and Cl₂O in order to optimise the experimental production conditions for a threshold PES study using synchrotron radiation. Reliable methods were developed to record threshold PE spectra of SF₂, HOCl and Cl₂O consistently for upwards of 4 hours. The work on HO₂ is still ongoing and the method developed requires further optimisation.

Absorption spectroscopy was used to determine the photolysis rate coefficient, in the atmosphere, of the atmospherically important molecule monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH₃SCH₂Cl) from u.v. photoabsorption cross-section measurements in the gas-phase.
First and foremost I must thank my supervisor Prof. John M. Dyke, firstly for giving me the opportunity to do this project and, more importantly, for his constant support, guidance and endless enthusiasm, to which I am indebted, throughout these years.

I also extend this gratitude to Dr Ed P. F. Lee and Dr Alan Morris, both of whom helped me endlessly over the last few years. I thank Ed for all of the helpful advice on quantum theory and for the quantum chemical calculations in which he performed for the investigations reported throughout this thesis. I thank Dr Alan Morris whose experimental expertise I could not have gone without.

I thank all those who I have had the privilege of working alongside; Prof. Dudley E. Shallcross, Dr Carl J. Percival, Dr David J. Kinnison and Dr Mariana V. Ghosh for all their expert advice on atmospheric chemistry, specifically atmospheric simulations, global modelling studies and reaction kinetics. I thank Dr Stefano Stranges, Prof. John B. West and Prof. George C. King for all their discussions and guidance on synchrotron radiation, threshold photoelectron spectroscopy and photoionisation cross-section measurements during my time working in Trieste.

I thank Gary Williams, Robert Mcpheat and Dr Kevin Smith at the Molecular Spectroscopy Facility in Rutherford Appleton Laboratories for all their help and expertise on u.v.-visible and infrared absorption spectroscopy and thank the National Environmental Research Council (NERC) for providing my studentship.

I must give the upmost praise to Rob Daly and Alan Glass in the mechanical workshop and Lee Mulholland and Przemyslaw “Shamack” Tyrc in the glass blowing workshop for all the help they provided me with in the design and manufacture of instrumental components and glassware, especially those required at the last minute!

I thank all my friends and colleagues in the PES group for making my time in Southampton so enjoyable, Marie Eypper, Otello M. Roscioni, Nerina Armatta, Sonya Becacecci, Fabrizio Innoccenti and Nicholas Zonias. I must also thank the Portuguese PES group, Rui M. Pinto, Mauro A. M. Guerra and to a very close friend, of which my life in Southampton would not have been the same without, Diana “Pigeon” Guimaraes, for all the good times, vacations and trips we had together. Lastly I must thank both my mum and dad for all the support they have given me throughout my Ph.D.
# Table of Contents

Declaration of Authorship .................................................. I
Abstract ........................................................................... II
Acknowledgements .............................................................. IV

## Chapter 1

Introduction

1.1 Introduction to Photoelectron Spectroscopy ................. 1
1.2 A Study of Reactive Intermediates using PES .......... 2
1.3 Rydberg States and Autoionisation Processes ........... 3
1.4 Cross-Sections ......................................................... 4
1.5 Use of PES in Kinetic Studies ................................. 5
1.6 Project Aims and Structure of Thesis ....................... 6
References ..................................................................... 8

## Chapter 2

Basic Principles

2.1 The Photoelectron Process ....................................... 12
2.1.1 Electronic Selection Rules ................................. 18
2.1.2 Vibrational Selection Rules and Franck-Condon Factors ... 18
2.2 Angular Distributions of Photoelectrons ................. 22
2.3 Summary ............................................................... 26
References ..................................................................... 27

## Chapter 3

Experimental Techniques

3.1 The Photoelectron Spectrometer ................................. 31
3.1.1 The Photon Source ........................................... 33
3.1.2 The Ionisation Chamber and the Reaction Cell .... 34
3.1.3 The Analyser Chamber ...................................... 35
3.1.4 Detector and Electronics ................................. 38
3.2 Inlet Systems .......................................................... 39
## Table of Contents

3.2.1 A Simple Glass Inlet System 39  
3.2.2 A Differentially Pumped Flow-Tube 42  
3.3 High Temperature PES 47  
3.4 Synchrotron Radiation PES Studies 52  
3.4.1 The ELETTRA Synchrotron Radiation Source 52  
3.4.1.1 The Circular Polarised Beamline, BL 4.2 54  
3.4.2 The Synchrotron Photoelectron Spectrometer 56  
3.4.2.1 The Three Element Lens System 58  
3.4.2.2 The Vacuum System 59  
3.4.2.3 The Hemispherical Electron Analyser 60  
3.4.2.4 The Detector and Electronics 61  
3.4.2.5 The Rotation Mechanism 61  
3.4.3 Threshold Photoelectron Spectra 63  
3.5 Summary 64  
References 65

Chapter 4 69

Theoretical Methods

4.1 The Hartree-Fock-Roothaan Method 70  
4.1.1 The Schrödinger Equation 70  
4.1.2 The Born-Oppenheimer Approximation 71  
4.1.3 The One-Electron Approximation 72  
4.1.4 Koopmans’ Theorem 78  
4.1.5 Electron Correlation 79  
4.1.6 Restricted and Unrestricted Hartree-Fock Methods 80  
4.2 Basis Sets 80  
4.3 Levels of Theory 84  
4.3.1 Configuration Interaction (CI) 84  
4.3.2 Coupled Cluster (CC) Method 85  
4.3.3 Møller-Plesset Perturbation Theory 86  
4.4 Summary 88  
References 89

Chapter 5 91

A Study of Pentafluoroethane and its Thermal Decomposition using PES and \textit{ab initio} Molecular Orbital Calculations

5.1 Experimental 93  
5.2 Computational Details 94  
5.3 Results and Discussion 95  
5.3.1 The Photoelectron Spectrum of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ 95  
5.3.2 Results of Electronic Structure Calculations 97  
5.3.3 Thermal Decomposition Studies of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ 105  
5.4 Conclusion 108  
References 110
# Table of Contents

## Chapter 9

A Study of the SF₂ and HOCl using TPES and PES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9.1 A Study of SF₂ using TPES</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.2 Experimental</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.3 Results and Discussion</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.4 Conclusion</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.5 A Study of HOCl and Cl₂O using TPES and PES</td>
<td>206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.6 Experimental</td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.6.1 Sample Preparation</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.7 Conclusion</td>
<td>214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>References</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## Chapter 10

A Determination of the Photolysis Rate Coefficient of Monochlorodimethyl Sulphide (CH₃SCH₂Cl) in the Atmosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>10.1 Experimental</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.2 Computational Details</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.3 Results and Discussion</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.3.1 The UV Absorption Spectrum of CH₃SCH₂Cl</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.3.2 The Infrared Absorption Spectrum of CH₃SCH₂Cl</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.3.3 Heat of Formation (ΔH₂⁰⁹⁸K) of CH₃SCH₂Cl</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.3.4 Dissociation of CH₃SCH₂Cl in the Excited State</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.4 Conclusion</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>References</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## Chapter 11

Conclusions and Future Work

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>11.1 Future Work</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>References</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Chapter 1

Introduction

The work described in this thesis involves the study of selected reactions of atmospheric importance using photoionisation and photoabsorption spectroscopic methods. The reactions investigated are relevant to the troposphere and the lower stratosphere. The main experimental method used in this work is photoelectron spectroscopy.

1.1 Introduction to Photoelectron Spectroscopy

Photoelectron spectroscopy (PES), first developed by Turner et al. [1] and Vilesov et al. [2] in the early 1960’s, is based on Einstein’s photoelectric effect. The technique is used to study electrons (photoelectrons) ejected from an occupied orbital in an atom or a molecule in the gas-phase after interaction with vacuum ultraviolet (v.u.v.) radiation [3-5]. The measured ionisation energies, abundances and angular distributions of photoelectrons are all characteristic of the individual atomic or molecular orbitals from which they originate [6]. The kinetic energy, \( \frac{1}{2}mv^2 \), of an emitted photoelectron varies linearly with the frequency of radiation used above a certain threshold, i.e. electrons will only be ejected from an atom or molecule when the incident radiation has sufficient energy, \( (hv) \), to overcome the ionisation energy, \( IE \), of the atom or molecule. The electron kinetic energy, photon energy and ionisation energy are related via,

\[
hv = \frac{1}{2}mv^2 + IE \tag{1.1}
\]

where \( m \) and \( v \) are the mass and velocity of the emitted photoelectron respectively. PES can provide information on the electronic structure, vibrational frequencies and bonding
character (e.g. dissociation energies) of molecules, and molecular ions. The basic principles of PES are described in the next chapter.

PES has played an important part in the study of the electronic structure of atoms and molecules over a number of years. It has developed into two separate areas of research, X-ray PES and vacuum ultraviolet PES. In X-ray PES (XPS) the photon energy is of the order of 1000 eV and is mainly used to probe core electrons in atoms or molecules. The development of XPS was largely due to Seigbahn et al. in the late 1950’s [7] and is usually used to investigate solid state materials and surfaces. However, vacuum ultraviolet PES (as is used in this work) uses photon energies of the order of 20-40 eV to investigate valence electrons of atoms and molecules. Ultraviolet PES has been mainly applied to the study of atoms and molecules in the gas-phase. The Southampton PES group has developed this method to study short lived atoms and molecules, which are of importance in plasmas, atmospheric chemistry and combustion chemistry. This ability to study short lived atoms and molecules is used in this work to investigate a number of reactions which are relevant in atmospheric chemistry.

1.2 A Study of Reactive Intermediates using PES

Reactive intermediates are short lived species (atoms or molecules) which are formed and react quickly during a reaction process. These short lived species play an essential role in allowing a reaction to proceed using the minimum energy required to go to completion. This makes them an integral part of the reaction process and as a result, reactive intermediates are of great importance in many chemical fields including chemical kinetics, atmospheric chemistry and combustion chemistry.

The study of reactive intermediates using PES has become the main research topic of the Southampton PES group [8]. Many atomic species, such as H(2S), O(3P), N(4S) and halogen atoms have been studied with this method [8, 9, 10]. Various other atomic species have also been investigated over the years in the gas-phase using PES, such as Zn, Cd, Hg and Ba [11-13]. A number of reactive diatomic and triatomic molecules have been studied by PES, e.g. O2, S2, OH, ClO, SiO, BrO, BrO2, ClO2, Cl2O, CF2 and SiF2 [14]. One of the first reactive intermediates investigated by PES was O2(a1Δg) [15, 16]. This is the first electronically excited state of O2 and is an important species in the atmosphere. O2(a1Δg) is present in relatively high partial pressures in the troposphere.
[17]. It is produced along with O(\(^1\)D) on photolysis of ozone at wavelengths lower than 320 nm and it is a major contributor to airglow in the atmosphere [18]. Larger short lived molecules (polyatomic molecules) have also been investigated using PES, such as CH\(_3\) and N\(_2\)O\(_5\) [19, 20]. The information obtained using PES, i.e. the electronic structure of molecular reactive intermediates and their ions, is often difficult to obtain using other spectroscopic techniques. However, producing reactive species reliably using PES in sufficient number densities can impose certain problems in itself. The lifetime of the species being investigated is an important factor. This can, to some extent, be alleviated by producing high enough concentrations of the species being investigated as close as possible to the point of photoionisation in order to be successfully detected. In order to study such short lived atoms and molecules in the vapour phase a number of preparative methods have been used. These include, microwave discharge of a flowing gas mixture, use of a suitable gas-phase reaction, (typically a rapid atom-molecule reaction) and high temperature pyrolysis (these are each described in Chapter 3). Several reviews have also been published discussing each of these methods [21-24]. Atmospherically important reactive intermediates have also been studied by related techniques such as resonance enhanced multiphoton ionisation spectroscopy (REMPI) [25], photoionisation mass spectrometry (PIMS) [26] and cavity ring down spectroscopy (CRDS) [27].

1.3 Rydberg States and Autoionisation Resonances

Synchrotron radiation was used in this work to record the first bands in the threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum of the triatomic molecules HO\(_2\) and SF\(_2\) (discussed in Chapter 9). The detection of threshold electrons is achieved by using a three element lens system which focuses low energy electrons towards the analyser of the spectrometer. A TPE spectrum is then obtained by sweeping the photon energy with the lens voltages to always extract threshold electrons (described in section 3.4.3 in Chapter 3). There are two main types of ionisation, direct (see equation 2.1 in Chapter 2) and indirect ionisation. Direct ionisation occurs when an incoming photon ejects an electron from a molecule. Indirect ionisation occurs when the energy of the incoming photon matches the energy of a discrete neutral excited state above an ionisation threshold. Ionisation then occurs from this excited state to the lower ionic state via an autoionisation process. Excited neutral states can be of two types, valence or Rydberg.
In atomic systems, the valence shell consists of a set of atomic orbitals with the same principal quantum number, \( n \), as that of the highest occupied orbital in the ground state. States obtained by promotion of electrons within the valence shell are termed valence excited states. In contrast a Rydberg state is a highly excited state obtained when an electron is promoted from the valence shell to an orbital with a higher principal quantum number. The energy of a Rydberg state, \( E_n \), relative to the ground state, is given by the formula [28],

\[
E_n = IE - \frac{R}{(n - \delta)^2}
\]  

(1.2)

where \( R \) is the Rydberg constant (13.61 eV), \( \delta \) is the quantum defect, which reflects the magnitude of penetration of the Rydberg orbital into the ionic core and \( n \) is the principal quantum number. The Rydberg constant varies slightly with the reduced mass of the electron-core system [28]. Rydberg states with successively higher principal quantum numbers form a series, converging to a particular ionisation limit, \( IE \). The Rydberg electrons are at a distance so large from the ionic core that the core appears as a point charge, leading to the near hydrogen-like behaviour of the Rydberg states. Threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectra provide complementary information to conventional PE spectra in that they can show evidence of indirect ionisation via Rydberg states. TPE spectra often show Franck-Condon vibrational distributions which are different from those of direct ionisation, because of indirect ionisation via autoionisation processes [29]. Autoionisation processes are discussed in more detail in Chapter 9 where TPE spectra are presented for the reactive intermediate SF\(_2\).

### 1.4 Cross-Sections

A cross-section can be thought of as the probability, per unit area, of an atom or molecule to be excited or emit a photoelectron at a given energy. It is measured in megabarns (Mb), where 1 Mb = \( 1 \times 10^{-18} \) cm\(^2\). A cross-section (absorption or ionisation) is a quantitative measure of the probability in which an atom or molecule will absorb or be ionised by a photon of a given energy. It can be expressed in terms of the Beer-Lambert law as,

\[
I = I_0 e^{-\sigma t c}
\]  

(1.3)
where \( I_0 \) is the intensity of incident radiation, \( I \) is the intensity of radiation after absorption or ionisation, \( l \) is the path length which the radiation traverses in the sample, \( c \) is the sample concentration and \( \sigma \) is the cross-section. All cross-sections (absorption and ionisation) are dependent on the photon energy. Inspection of equation (1.3) shows that if the path length has units of cm and the concentration has units of molecules cm\(^{-3}\) then the cross-section has units of cm\(^2\).

Reliable cross-sections are needed to convert absorption or photoelectron band intensities into partial pressures and this is very useful when investigating gas-phase reactions which may proceed via more than one channel. Experimental techniques such as ultraviolet laser absorption spectroscopy and electron momentum spectroscopy have been successful in measuring the absorption and photoionisation cross-sections respectively, of various atmospherically important species, e.g. CH\(_2\)O, CO\(_2\) and O\(_2\) [30-32]. Photoionisation cross-sections (PI-CS) at selected photon energies have also been measured using PES by groups such as Kimura et al., Samson et al., and Marr and West [33-35]. The experimental method used in this work to measure the PI-CS of reactants and products observed from the ozone-alkene reactions closely follows that outlined by Kimura et al. [33] and Samson et al. [34], and is described in detail in Chapters 7 and 8.

1.5 Use of PES in Kinetics Studies

PES has been used to study first-order reactions by Wang et al. [36-38] and second-order reactions by Dyke et al. [39, 40]. Wang et al. studied the first-order rearrangement of a number of compounds as a function of time and derived first-order rate coefficients. Examples of the reactions studied were the isomerisation of CH\(_3\)NC to CH\(_3\)CN and the isomerisation of SSF\(_2\) to FSSF. For a reaction \([A] \rightarrow [B]\), the first-order rate coefficient, \(k_1\) is given by,

\[
\text{Rate} = k_1[A]
\]  \hspace{1cm} (1.4)

The first-order rate coefficient can be determined by the loss of \([A]\) as a function of time; \((\log_e[A])\) is plotted against time to yield a slope of \(-k\). Wang et al. reported the first-order rate coefficients of selected compounds by plotting \(\log_e[A]/[B]\) versus time. This resulted in the rate coefficients obtained being in error, although his published data could still be used to derive the correct rate coefficients.
Since the work of Wang, PES has been used to measure the rate coefficient of a second-order reaction. This was done by Dyke *et al.* [39, 40], where the rate coefficient for the atmospherically important reaction between molecular chlorine and dimethyl sulphide (DMS) was determined using a differentially pumped flow-tube interfaced to a PE spectrometer (described in Chapter 3). By working under pseudo first-order conditions with $[\text{Cl}_2] \gg [\text{DMS}]$, the rate coefficient was determined by measuring the relative concentration of DMS using the intensity of its first PE band, at different reaction times at fixed chlorine partial pressure. Reaction times were determined by the position of the moveable injector on the flow-tube. This was then repeated at different partial pressures of chlorine. Plotting $\log_e \left( \frac{[\text{DMS}]_0}{[\text{DMS}]_t} \right)$ against reaction time at a known concentration of chlorine gave a gradient which was equal to the pseudo first-order rate coefficient, $k'$. The second-order rate coefficient was then determined from the slope of the plot of $k'$ versus $[\text{Cl}_2]$. During the course of this project the differentially pumped flow-tube was only used for the photoionisation cross-section (PI-CS) measurements to allow reaction branching ratios to be determined for selected ozone-alkene reactions. The determination of branching ratios for these ozone-alkene reactions is described in Chapters 7 and 8.

1.6 Project Aims and Structure of the Thesis

The main aim of this project was to study reactions of atmospheric importance in the gas-phase using PES.

First an investigation was carried out on the thermal decomposition pathways of two hydrofluorocarbon (HFC) fire suppression agents, pentafluoroethane (HFC-125) and 2-H heptafluoropropane (FM-200). These are being used as replacements for chlorine and bromine containing molecules, such as CF$_2$BrCl, C$_2$F$_4$Br$_2$ and the commonly used Halon 1301 (CF$_3$Br) which have been banned because of their high ozone depleting potentials (ODP) in the atmosphere [41]. State-of-the-art *ab initio* calculations were also carried out (by Dr E. P. F. Lee of Southampton PES group) to obtain reliable adiabatic ionisation energies (AIE) and vertical ionisation energies (VIE) in order to assist interpretation of the experimental PE spectra and also to obtain reliable enthalpies of formation for selected neutral molecules and ions in their ground electronic state.
Then, a study was made of selected ozone-alkene reactions using a flow-tube interfaced to a PE spectrometer in order to measure product branching ratios. Alkenes, produced biogenically and anthropogenically, are an important class of volatile organic compounds (VOCs) in the troposphere [42-45]. Significant experimental studies have been carried out investigating the kinetics and mechanisms of these reactions [46-58]. Rate coefficients and products have been determined for a number of ozone-alkene reactions; however no complete product branching ratio data is available for any alkene-ozone reaction. The ozone-alkene reactions chosen for study were O$_3$ with ethene, O$_3$ with 2-methylpropene (2MP) and O$_3$ with 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene (DMB). For each reaction, the measured product PE band intensities were converted into product branching ratios using measured photoionisation cross-sections (PI-CS). These yields were then used (by Prof. D. E. Shallcross of Bristol University) in a global atmospheric model to estimate the annual global budgets of the observed products. Kinetics simulations were also carried out in this work for all three reactions in order to establish the main pathway for production of each observed product.

A secondary aim of this project was to study four non-linear triatomic molecules, SF$_2$, HO$_2$, HOCl and Cl$_2$O using TPES and study the atmospherically important species monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl) using ultraviolet absorption spectroscopy.

The structure of the thesis is as follows: Chapter 2 describes the basic principles of PES. Chapter 3 describes the spectrometers that have been used throughout this project, along with the other apparatus used with descriptions of the various sampling techniques employed. Chapter 4 focuses on the theoretical methods used to perform calculations to assist in the assignment of the PE spectra obtained. Chapters 5 and 6 discuss the thermal decomposition pathways of two hydrofluorocarbon (HFC) fire suppression agents, pentafluoroethane (HFC-125) and 2-H heptafluoropropane (FM-200) respectively. Chapters 7 and 8 present results obtained for the reactions between ozone and selected alkene molecules, (ethene, 2-methylpropene and 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene). Chapter 9 discusses attempts to record TPE spectra of four non-linear triatomic molecules and Chapter 10 describes a determination of the photolysis rate coefficient of monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl) in the atmosphere. Finally, Chapter 11 concludes the thesis with a summary of the project and outlines possibilities for future work.
References

Introduction

Chapter 2

Basic Principles of PES

In 1864, Maxwell first postulated that electricity, magnetism and light were all governed by the same phenomenon; the electromagnetic field. His theory stated that the energy of an electron emitted from a molecule would be directly proportional to the intensity of the radiation incident on the molecule (later found not to be the case) [1]. In 1887, Hertz showed that the velocity of an electromagnetic wave was equal to the velocity of light and that a charged object loses its charge more readily when illuminated by ultraviolet radiation [2].

In 1902, Lenard first observed from his experiments that cathode rays were scattered when passed through air. This discovery implied that the cathode rays were electromagnetic waves which must have particle-like qualities. These particles however had to be smaller than those which made up the surrounding air in order for the rays to travel through. From this he confirmed that cathode rays were streams of negatively charged particles and suggested that atoms, for the most part, must consist of “empty space”. Lenard’s most important observation, contradictory to that postulated earlier by Maxwell, was that the energy of the emitted rays or particles, on irradiation of a molecule with ultraviolet radiation, was independent of the intensity of the radiation, noting that the energy of the rays increased for shorter wavelengths of radiation [3].

In 1905, Einstein solved the particle-wave discrepancy by describing radiation as being composed of discrete quanta, i.e. photons, rather than radiation being described purely as continuous waves, on which all other postulates were founded. This idea was based on Planck's quantum hypothesis of black-body radiation [4]. Einstein theorised that the
energy in each quanta of radiation was equal to the frequency multiplied by a constant, \( (h = 6.626 \times 10^{-34} \text{ Js}) \) [5]. This is better known as the photoelectric effect, which states that when an atom or a molecule is subjected to electromagnetic radiation above a certain threshold frequency, the radiation induces the emission of an electron. This later earned Einstein the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1921. Photoelectron spectroscopy (PES) was first developed by Turner et al. [6] and Vilesov et al. [7] in the early 1960’s and is based on Einstein’s photoelectric effect. The technique is used to study photoelectrons and measure ionisation energies, abundances and angular distributions of the ejected photoelectrons, which are all characteristic of the molecular orbitals from which they originate [8-11].

In this chapter, the basic principles of photoelectron spectroscopy will be discussed together with a description of the ionisation process, with consideration given to the Franck-Condon principle. The fundamental principles of angular distribution will also be presented along with the determination of relative photoionisation cross-sections (PI-CS) when polarised and unpolarised radiation is used.

### 2.1 The Photoelectron Process

The photoelectron spectrometers used in this work use a helium discharge lamp to provide a flux of unpolarised photons, targeted towards sample molecules in the gas-phase, of sufficient energy to eject electrons occupying the valence shell of the molecules. The photoelectron process is shown below in equation 2.1.

\[
M + h\nu \rightarrow M^+ + e^- \tag{2.1}
\]

where \( M \) is a neutral molecule and \( h\nu \) is the photon energy. A photon will remove an electron from an occupied orbital in an atom or molecule provided the energy of the photon is greater than the binding energy or ionisation energy of the electron. By conservation of energy, the photon energy is related to the electron kinetic energy \((KE)\) and ionisation energy \((IE)\) as follows,

\[
IE = E(h\nu) - KE \tag{2.2}
\]

Equation 2.2 assumes that no kinetic energy is imparted to the ion in the photoionisation process [12]. This is a good assumption due to the large difference in the mass of the
ion and the ejected electron. Experimentally, the photoelectrons emitted are separated according to their kinetic energies using an electron energy analyser (described in section 3.1.3 in Chapter 3). From an atom, if the energy of the photons, $h\nu$, is known and the kinetic energies of the emitted photoelectrons being detected are measured, then the ionisation energy, $\text{IE}$, to each ionic state of the atom investigated can be determined. This is shown schematically in Figure 2.1 for an atom, $A$.

When a molecule is ionised, vibrational and rotational excitation on ionisation must be considered. Equation 2.2 is then modified to,

$$KE = h\nu - \text{IE} - \Delta E_{\text{vib}} - \Delta E_{\text{rot}}$$

(2.3)

where $\Delta E_{\text{vib}}$ and $\Delta E_{\text{rot}}$ are the change in vibrational and rotational energies on ionisation respectively. Experimentally rotational structure is not normally resolved in conventional PES; however a typical photoelectron spectrum of a diatomic molecule would show vibrationally resolved structure and an example is shown for $O_2$ in Figure 2.2. As rotational structure is not normally resolved, equation 2.3 can be written as,

$$KE = h\nu - \text{IE}' - \Delta E_{\text{vib}}$$

(2.4)

where $\text{IE}'$ is equal to $\text{IE} + \Delta E_{\text{rot}}$, and therefore includes a rotational average of the rotational components within a PE vibrational component. The vibrational components in each band, (e.g. in the first band of $O_2$ ($a$) seen in the ionisation energy region 12.0-13.0 eV in Figure 2.2), correspond to ionisations from the ground vibrational level in the neutral ground state, to the vibrational levels in the ionic state [11]. Figure 2.2 shows the PE spectrum of a mixture of gases; $O_2$, $O_3$ and argon, (this spectrum was recorded during the preparation of $O_3$ which is described in Chapters 7 and 8) and yields a lot of information about the molecules investigated.

Figure 2.1: Schematic diagram showing the relationship of the photon energy, kinetic energy and ionisation energy when ionising an atom, $A$. 
There are five main types of information which can be provided from such a spectrum,

1. The adiabatic ionisation energy, \((\text{AIE})\) of a band, which corresponds to an ionisation from the vibrational ground state of the neutral molecule to the vibrational ground state in the ion. It is usually the first vibrational component seen in a PE band, e.g. 12.083 eV is the AIE for the first band of \(\text{O}_2\), represented as \((a)\) in Figure 2.2.

2. The vertical ionisation energy, \((\text{VIE})\). This corresponds to the most intense component in a photoelectron band and is seen at 12.317 eV in band \((a)\) for \(\text{O}_2\).

3. The separations in resolved vibrational components in a band. These can be used to determine vibrational constants in the ionic state (see equation 2.18).

4. The relative intensities of vibrational components within a band can be used to determine the change in equilibrium bond length on ionisation.
5. The relative intensities of bands can be used to obtain relative photoionisation cross-sections as the areas of the photoelectron bands are proportional to the relative probabilities of ionisation to different ionic states [11].

Experimental factors are also important in determining relative photoionisation cross-sections and these are discussed in section 2.2 of this chapter and in Chapters 7 and 8.

For closed-shell molecules, the VIEs measured in PES can be used to estimate the orbital energies of a molecule by use of Koopmans’ theorem [6, 14]. This states, in a closed-shell molecule, that the vertical ionisation energy, $IE_j$, of an emitted electron is equal in magnitude to the negative of the orbital energy, $-\varepsilon_j$, from which the electron originated. This relationship is shown in equation 2.5,

$$IE_j = -\varepsilon_j$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.5)

where, $-\varepsilon_j$, is derived from a molecular orbital calculation at the Hartree-Fock limit (described in section 4.1.4 of Chapter 4). This indicates that if a photoelectron spectrum of a closed-shell molecule is recorded, then the negative of the VIEs of the experimental bands can be used to construct a molecular orbital diagram for that molecule. However, Koopmans’ theorem is only an approximation, as it does not take into consideration the effects of electron reorganisation and electron correlation upon ionisation, (see section 4.1.5 of Chapter 4 for a description of electron reorganisation and correlation). The changes in molecular geometry on ionisation can also be deduced from a PE spectrum giving an indication of the character of the orbital (bonding, anti-bonding or non-bonding) from which ionisation occurred. This information is associated with the shape and structure from the observed PE bands. Hartree-Fock theory is discussed in greater detail in section 4.1 of Chapter 4.

A photoelectron spectrum is recorded by counting emitted photoelectrons, per unit time, over a range of kinetic energies using a photon source of fixed energy. This provides a map of the ionic states of a given molecule. In a PE spectrum, each PE band, including all vibrational components, corresponds to an ionisation (removal of an electron) from a given molecular orbital (MO). There are two main types of ionisation, direct (as shown in equation 2.1) and indirect ionisation. Direct ionisation occurs when an incoming photon ejects an electron from a molecule. Indirect ionisation occurs when the energy of the incoming photon matches the energy of a discrete neutral excited state, $AB^*$, (a
Rydberg state) above an ionisation threshold. Once the electron has been promoted to a Rydberg orbital, then one of the following decay mechanisms in the excited neutral state can occur,

1. Re-radiation: \[ \text{AB} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{AB}^* \rightarrow \text{AB} + h\nu \]
2. Predissociation: \[ \text{AB} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{AB}^* \rightarrow \text{A} + \text{B} \]
3. Ion pair formation: \[ \text{AB} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{AB}^* \rightarrow \text{A}^- + \text{B}^- \]
4. Autoionisation: \[ \text{AB} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{AB}^* \rightarrow \text{AB}^+ + e^- \]

where \( \text{AB} \) represents a diatomic molecule. A lot of work concerning Rydberg states of molecules has been carried out over the years in the Southampton PES group using constant ionic state (CIS) spectroscopy, (using the same photoelectron spectrometer as described in section 3.4.2 of Chapter 3); however as only direct ionisation techniques were used during the course of this work indirect ionisation processes will not be discussed further in this thesis [15-17].

Direct ionisation processes are governed by selection rules which account for the electronic and vibrational changes which occur on ionisation. The probability of ionisation, between the initial molecular ground state, \( \Psi^{''} \), and the final state (which includes the ion plus the electron), \( \Psi^{'} \), is proportional to the square modulus of the transition moment integral, \( M \),

\[
M = \int \Psi' \Sigma p \Psi^{''} \, d\tau \quad (2.6)
\]

where \( p \) is the dipole moment operator which extends over all positions for the electrons, \( i \) and ions \( j \), (i.e. \( x_{ij}, y_{ij} \) and \( z_{ij} \)). \( \Psi^{''} \) and \( \Psi^{'} \) are functions of the electron, with co-ordinates \( r \), at nuclear coordinates, \( R \). The Born-Oppenheimer approximation can be used to separate out the initial and final state functions, \( \Psi^{''} \) and \( \Psi^{'} \) respectively, into products of the electronic, \( \Psi_e(r, R) \) and nuclear (vibrational and rotational), \( \Psi_n(R) \) wavefunctions to give,

\[
\Psi(r,R) = \Psi_e(r,R)\Psi_n(R) \quad (2.7)
\]

This approximation is based on the large difference in mass between electrons and nuclei and assumes that the electrons move in a fixed potential generated by the nuclei (see section 4.1.2 in Chapter 4 for a more detailed description).
The dependence of $\Psi_e$ on $R$ retains the weak interaction between the electronic and nuclear motion [18]. Since the rotational structure of bands in a PE spectrum is usually unresolved, the nuclear wavefunction, $\Psi_n$ can be treated as a vibrational function, neglecting rotation, i.e. $\Psi_n = \Psi_v$. The electronic-nuclear separation of the wavefunction can also be applied to the dipole operator,

$$\Sigma_{i,j} p = \Sigma_i p_e + \Sigma_j p_n$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.8)

Substituting this into equation 2.6 the transition moment integral becomes,

$$M = \int \Psi_e^{**}(r,R) \Psi_e^{**}(R) (\Sigma_i p_e + \Sigma_j p_n) \Psi_e'(r,R) \Psi_e'(R) dR$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.9)

Separating out the electronic and nuclear dipole operators in equation 2.9 gives,

$$M = \int \Psi_v^{**}(R) \Psi_v'(R) dR \int \Psi_e^{**}(r,R) \Sigma_i p_e \Psi_e'(r,R) dr$$

$$+ \int \Psi_v^{**}(R) \Sigma_j p_n \Psi_v'(R) dR \int \Psi_e^{**}(r,R) \Psi_e'(r,R) dr$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.10)

The electronic functions which belong to different states are orthogonal to one another and the second term in equation 2.10 therefore vanishes for electronic transitions. Assuming that the dependence of $\Psi_e$ on the nuclear coordinates is neglected, equation 2.10 becomes,

$$M = \int \Psi_v^{**}(R) \Psi_v'(R) dR \int \Psi_e^{**}(r,R) \Sigma_i p_e \Psi_e'(r,R_{eq}) dr$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.11)

where $R_{eq}$ is the equilibrium ground state configuration. Equation 2.11 now consists of one factor which depends on the nuclear motion and a second factor which depends on the electronic motion. From equation 2.11, the photoionisation transition probability ($P$) can be expressed as [18],

$$P \propto \left| \int \Psi_v^{**}(R) \Psi_v'(R) dR \right|^2 \left| \int \Psi_e^{**}(r,R_{eq}) \Sigma_i p_e \Psi_e'(r,R_{eq}) dr \right|^2$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.12)

This can be simplified to,

$$P \propto \left| \int \Psi_v^{**}(R) \Psi_v'(R) dR \right|^2 \left| M_e(r,R_{eq}) \right|^2$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.13)
The first term is called the **Franck-Condon Factor** and it is this which controls the relative intensities of the vibrational components observed in a PE band from a PE spectrum. The second term is the square modulus of the electric dipole transition moment, $M_e$, and is usually assumed constant over a PE band.

### 2.1.1 Electronic Selection Rules

An electronic transition is allowed only when the electric dipole transition moment, $M_e$, shown as the second term in equation 2.13, is different from zero. Only one-electron transitions are permitted due to $p_e$ being a one-electron operator. If the wavefunctions for the neutral and ionic states are constructed from the same set of molecular orbitals (MOs), and no reorganisation occurs on ionisation, only the electronic states which are different from those of the neutral states by one MO can be observed in PES. If spin-orbit interactions are small, the electronic wavefunctions, $\Psi_e$, can be expressed as a product of an orbital, $\Psi_e'$ and as a spin function, $\Psi_s$ [8-10],

$$\Psi_e = \Psi_e' \times \Psi_s$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.14)

The spin functions corresponding to different spin values are orthogonal to one another and $M_e(r, R_e)$ is zero for states of different spin. Ionisation is allowed only between initial and final states with the same spin, i.e. $\Delta S = 0$, where the final state wavefunction is a product of both the ion and free electron wavefunctions. Closed-shell molecules with singlet neutral ground states have spin, $S_{mol} = 0$. The ejected photoelectron always has half-integral spin, $S_e = \frac{1}{2}$. Only doublet ionic states, $S_{ion} = \frac{1}{2}$, are therefore accessible from singlet neutral ground states.

### 2.1.2 Vibrational Selection Rules and Franck-Condon Factors

The relative intensity of a vibrational component in a PE band is given by the **Franck-Condon Factor** (FCF), which is written as,

$$FCF = |M_v|^2 = \left| \int \Psi_v''*(R) \Psi_v'(R)dR \right|^2$$  \hspace{1cm} (2.15)

The Franck-Condon principle states that the intensity of a vibrational component in an electronically allowed transition (or ionisation) is proportional to the absolute square of the overlap integral of the vibrational wavefunctions of the initial and final states. These
ionisations can be represented using potential energy curves and this is shown in Figure 2.3. In a diatomic molecule the difference in energy, $\Delta E$, between the lowest vibrational levels $v'' = 0$ and $v'' = 1$ in the electronic ground state of a molecule, $AB$, is usually large with respect to $k_B T$, $(208 \text{ cm}^{-1})$ at room temperature. For this reason it is therefore assumed that the lowest vibrational state $v'' = 0$ is significantly more populated compared to the higher levels $v'' = n$. During ionisation, a number of ionisations can take place and they will be observed in a PE spectrum for each ionic state reached. Ionic states are represented in Figure 2.3 as $X$, $A$ and $B$ with the three corresponding PE bands, shown in the adjacent spectrum, associated with these ionic states. The vibrational wavefunctions are shown for the vibrational levels of the neutral ground state, $v'' = 0$, for molecule $AB$ and for the vibrational levels of the first three ionic states, $X$, $A$ and $B$ respectively. The wavefunctions for the lowest vibrational levels, in both neutral and ionic states, are “bell shaped” while the wavefunctions of higher vibrational levels have broad maxima and minima near the classical turning points of the motion. It must be noted that the difference in energy, $\Delta E$, between vibrational levels in any given state, neutral or ionic, decreases when approaching the dissociation limit and this is due to anharmonicity; however this is not represented in Figure 2.3 for illustrative purposes. In Figure 2.3, the molecular, $AB$, and ionic, $AB^+X$, ground states have similar equilibrium bond lengths and the shapes of their potential curves are also similar. As a result, the overlap of the $v'' = 0$ wavefunction with the $v' = 0$ wavefunction is good, giving an overlap integral close to 1.0, whereas overlap of the $v'' = 0$ wavefunction with the $v' = 1$ and $v' = 2$ wavefunctions give much lower overlap integrals. This would be consistent with ionisation of a non-bonding electron. For ionisation to the $A$ state of the ion, an increase in equilibrium bond length occurs. This would be consistent with ionisation from a bonding electron. Overlap of the $v'' = 0$ wavefunction with the $v' = 0$ wavefunction is now much less effective. The overlap of the $v'' = 0$ wavefunction is greatest for the $v' = 1$ wavefunction and an envelope is observed in the PE spectrum shown in Figure 2.3 (shown in red). Two terms are used when considering the vibrational structure of a PE band, the adiabatic ionisation energy (AIE) and the vertical ionisation energy (VIE), which have been briefly described in the previous section of this chapter. The AIE represents the energy required to ionise the neutral molecule in the lowest vibrational level to the lowest vibrational level in the ionic state and is generally the first vibrational component seen in a PE band.
Figure 2.3: Schematic diagram illustrating the Franck-Condon principle (for direct ionisation) showing the potential energy curves for a molecule, AB, in its ground state and for the ion, AB\(^+\), in several ionic states, X, A and B. [8]. Schematic PE bands are shown on the right hand side.
The VIE is the energy required to ionise from the lowest vibrational level of the neutral molecule to the vibrational level of the ionic state whose wavefunction has the largest degree of overlap with the \( v'' = 0 \) wavefunction, yielding the maximum overlap integral which is seen as the most intense component of a PE band. The AIE and VIE are only the same when the overlap integral is greatest for the ionisation \( v' = 0 \leftarrow v'' = 0 \). An example of this is shown for the first PE band in Figure 2.3. The energies of vibrational levels in a diatomic molecule in a given electronic state can be represented by the anharmonic oscillator expression [19],

\[
E_{vib} = \omega_e(v + \frac{1}{2}) - \omega_e\chi_e(v + \frac{1}{2})^2
\]

(2.16)

where \( v \) is the vibrational quantum number, \( \omega_e \) is the vibrational constant and \( \chi_e \) is the anharmonicity constant. If the structure observed in a PE band is vibrationally resolved then the spacing between the vibrational components, \( \Delta E_{vib} \), can be determined by using equation 2.16 to give,

\[
\Delta E_{vib} = E_{v'+1} - E_{v'}
\]

(2.17)

where \( E_{v'+1} \) and \( E_{v'} \) are ionisation energies from \( v'' = 0 \) to successive vibrational levels \((v' + 1 \text{ and } v')\), in the ionic state. By measuring the separations in vibrational components seen in PE band, it is possible to determine the vibrational constants \( \omega_e \) and \( \omega_e\chi_e \) of the ionic state. This is shown in equation 2.18, obtained from equations 2.16 and 2.17,

\[
\Delta E_{vib} = \omega_e - 2\omega_e\chi_e(v + 1)
\]

(2.18)

Plotting the separation of vibrational components, \( \Delta E_{vib} \), as a function of \((v' + 1)\) will yield a line of slope \(-2\omega_e\chi_e\) and intercept \( \omega_e \). A comparison of the \( \omega_e \) value obtained in the ionic state with the measured value of \( \omega_e \) in the molecular ground state can give an estimate of the bonding character of the orbital which the electron occupied before ionisation, e.g. if ionisation occurred from a bonding electron, the bond strength is weakened in the ionic state. The equilibrium bond length would increase and the vibrational constant \( \omega_e \) of the ion will decrease. The opposite trends are expected for ionisation from an anti-bonding orbital.
In the first PE band of hexafluoropropene (C₃F₆), a product observed from the thermal decomposition of 2-H heptafluoropropane, a regular vibrational series is observed in the C=C stretching mode. This was analysed using equation 2.18 by plotting ΔEᵥib versus (v' + 1) to give $\omega_c$ and $\omega_{eX}$ in the ionic state for this vibration. This is discussed further in section 6.3.1 of Chapter 6.

### 2.2 Angular Distributions of Photoelectrons

The photoelectrons ejected during photoionisation are not emitted equally in all directions; also the angular distributions of such photoelectrons differ depending on the ionic state produced. As a result, the band intensities in PE spectra depend on, 1) the angle at which photoelectrons are detected with respect to either the propagating direction (for unpolarised radiation) of the incident radiation or the direction of the electric vector of polarisation of the photons (for polarised radiation) and 2) the energy of the photon beam used.

The angular dependence of the cross-section, $d\sigma/d\Omega$, where $\sigma$ is the absolute angle-integrated cross-section and $\Omega$ is the solid angle collected, for polarised radiation in the electric dipole approximation can be expressed as [20, 21],

$$\frac{d\sigma}{d\Omega} = \frac{\sigma}{4\pi} \left[ 1 + \beta P_2(\cos \theta) \right] \quad (2.19)$$

where $\theta$ is the angle between the direction of polarisation of the incident radiation and the detector, $\sigma$ is the absolute photoionisation cross-section (PI-C5) at the photon energy used, $\beta$ is the electric dipole asymmetry (anisotropy) parameter and $P_2(\cos \theta)$ is the second-order Legendre polynomialwhich is expressed as,

$$P_2(\cos \theta) = \frac{1}{2} (3\cos^2 \theta - 1) \quad (2.20)$$

Equation 2.19 can be re-written as,

$$I(\theta) = \frac{\sigma}{4\pi} \left[ 1 + \frac{\beta}{2} (3\cos^2 \theta - 1) \right] \quad (2.21)$$

If the incident radiation is unpolarised, as is the case in the He(I) PES experiments performed in this work, then the intensity as a function of $\theta'$ can be written as [11],

---

*Basic Principles*
Basic Principles

\[ I(\theta') = \frac{\sigma}{4\pi} \left[ 1 + \frac{\beta}{2} \left( \frac{3}{2} \sin^2 \theta' - 1 \right) \right] \]  \hspace{1cm} (2.22)

where \( \theta' \) defines the angle at which the electrons are detected with respect to the propagating direction of the incident radiation.

In the dipole approximation, the \( \beta \) parameter is sufficient to completely describe the angular distributions of the outgoing photoelectrons emitted during ionisation and can have any value between 2 and -1. In the case of ionisation with polarised radiation, equation 2.21, \( \beta = 2 \) corresponds to a pure \( \cos^2 \theta \) distribution, \( \beta = 0 \) corresponds to a spherical distribution and \( \beta = -1 \) corresponds to a pure \( \sin^2 \theta \) distribution.

The dipole approximation also results in the selection rule \( \Delta l = \pm 1 \) applying for photoionisation, where \( l \) is the angular momentum quantum number for the electron removed. As a result, ionisation from an \( s \) orbital, \( l = 0 \), a \( p \) photoelectron will be produced and ionisation from an atomic orbital of angular momentum \( l > 0 \) will give rise to two outgoing electron waves of angular momentum \( (l + 1) \) and \( (l - 1) \). Both waves will interfere with one another, as is manifested by the difference in phase shifts, \( \cos(\delta_{l+1} - \delta_{l-1}) \) in the Cooper Zare formula for \( \beta \) [22],

\[ \beta = \frac{l(l - 1)R_{l-1}^2 + (l + 1)(l + 2)R_{l+1}^2 - 6l(l + 1)R_{l+1}R_{l-1} \cos(\delta_{l+1} - \delta_{l-1})}{(2l + 1)(lR_{l-1}^2 + (l + 1)R_{l+1}^2)} \]  \hspace{1cm} (2.23)

where \( \delta_{l\pm1} \) are the phase shifts of the \( l \)th partial wave and \( R \) is the radial matrix element, expressed as,

\[ R_{l\pm1}(\varepsilon) = \int_0^{\infty} P_{nl}(r) r P_{\varepsilon,l\pm1}(r) dr \]  \hspace{1cm} (2.24)

\( \beta \) values for the simple atomic ionisations are \( \beta = 2 \) for an \( s \rightarrow p \) ionisation, \( \beta = 0 \) for a \( p \rightarrow s \) ionisation and for a \( p \rightarrow d \) ionisation \( \beta = 1 \) [23]. For a \( p \) ionisation, two waves (\( s \) and \( d \)) are produced and the \( \beta \) value at a given photon energy is determined by equation 2.23.

The asymmetry parameter, \( (\beta) \) depends on the character of the molecular orbital from which the photoelectron is removed and therefore is constant within a particular photoelectron band. The detection angle at which the spectra are measured is also
crucial when measuring β parameters. For linearly polarised radiation, the β values can be determined experimentally by measuring the intensity, \( I \), of a PE band at two known detection angles, (\( \theta \)), with respect to the direction of the polarisation vector of the photon beam, using equation 2.21.

If the band intensity is measured at \( \theta = 0^\circ \), then equation 2.21 becomes,

\[
I_0 = \frac{\sigma}{4\pi} (1 + \beta) \tag{2.25}
\]

If the band intensity is measured at \( 54^\circ 44' \) (54.736\(^\circ\)), the magic angle, with respect to the photon beam, the intensities are independent of the β parameter and therefore the intensity of a measured PE band is directly proportional to the photoionisation cross-section and equation 2.25 becomes,

\[
I_{54^\circ 44'} = \frac{\sigma}{4\pi} \tag{2.26}
\]

The angular distribution parameter, β, can be determined from ratio of the intensities, given in equations 2.25 and 2.26, and can be written as,

\[
\frac{I_0}{I_{54^\circ 44'}} = (1 + \beta) \tag{2.27}
\]

Equation 2.27 can be simplified to,

\[
\beta = R - 1 \tag{2.28}
\]

where \( R \) is ratio of the measured PE band intensities shown in equation 2.28. Therefore by recording PE spectra at two different angles, \( \theta = 0^\circ \) and \( \theta = 54^\circ 44' \), it is possible to obtain the β values \([16, 20]\). In this way, further information can be obtained about the photoionisation process, mainly concerning the character of the initial orbital and the nature of the free electron wavefunction.

For unpolarised radiation the β values can also be determined experimentally by measuring the intensity, \( I \), of a PE band at different detection angles, (\( \theta' \)), away from the direction of propagation of the photon beam shown in equation 2.22. If PE bands are measured at \( \theta' = 90^\circ \), as is the case in this work, then equation 2.22 can be written as \([24, 25]\).
As part of this work, reaction branching ratios were determined for selected ozone plus alkenes reactions (see Chapters 7 and 8). In order to determine the reaction branching ratios for each of the alkene plus ozone reactions studied, the partial pressures of reactants and products were determined (deduced from cross-section measurements). This was done by measuring the intensities of selected PE bands observed for the reactants and products as a function of reaction time. However, in order to put these measurements on an absolute scale, the photoionisation cross-sections (PI-CS) of both reactants and reaction products were measured. The sample preparation and sampling method used to do this, described in detail in Chapter 7, were developed with the aim of measuring the photoionisation cross-sections of the reactants and products relative to argon at 90° to an unpolarised photon beam. Argon was chosen as a reference as it is inert and has a well established photoionisation cross-section at the photon energy used in this work i.e. 21.22 eV. Relative photoionisation cross-sections can then be calculated from intensity measurements at 90° to an unpolarised photon beam using,

$$I(\theta) = \frac{\sigma}{4\pi} \left(1 + \frac{\beta}{4}\right)$$

(2.29)

for the same partial pressures of the sample and reference gas. As all photoionisation cross-section measurements were carried out using the same spectrometer in this work, absolute, angular independent intensities were not required to obtain the relative branching ratios needed and therefore the associated $\beta$ parameters were not determined experimentally. However measured PI-CS were put on an absolute scale by using $\beta$ values obtained from the literature purely for completeness. The experimental method used to measure the PI-CS of reactants and products observed from the ozone plus alkene reactions closely follows that outlined by Samson et al. [24] and Kimura et al. [26] and is described in greater detail in Chapters 7 and 8. The methods used rely on the characteristics of the apparatus being used, i.e. energy of the photon source, geometry and transmission efficiency of the analyser, and the photoelectron detection angle as well as the sampling preparation method and sample admission procedures. The equipment and apparatus used for all the experiments performed, which have been
reported in this thesis, are described in the following chapter, and the preparation and sampling methods are described in their respective chapters.

2.3 Summary

This chapter has focused on the basic principles of PES which are relevant to the work outlined in this thesis. The photoelectric effect has been described in order to show how it is used experimentally in PES and explained in relation to recorded PE spectra. This has included a description of the basic principles which govern direct ionisation, a discussion of the vibrational structure observed in PE bands and how the Franck-Condon principle can be used with experimental spectra to provide information on the ionic states and the character of the molecular orbitals from which ionisation has occurred. A description of photoelectron angular distribution parameters and how they can be measured experimentally along with photoionisation cross-sections was also given. These principles have been applied to the analysis of the results obtained during this work, as well as in developing some of the experimental procedures used.
References

Basic Principles


Chapter 3

Experimental Techniques

In this chapter experimental techniques are described which are used to study selected molecules and reactions of atmospheric importance using photoelectron spectroscopy (PES). All the work described in Chapters 5 to 9 of this thesis has been carried out using three spectrometers, all of which have been designed by Dr Alan Morris of the Southampton photoelectron spectroscopy group [1-6].

The first spectrometer consists of a 150° hemispherical electron energy analyser with a mean radius of 10 cm. It uses a helium discharge lamp to produce a flux of unpolarised photons of fixed energy (21.22eV). This spectrometer, referred to as the small spectrometer, was used to study the reactions, O$_3$ + ethene, O$_3$ + 2-methylpropene (2MP) and O$_3$ + 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene (DMB) by recording PE spectra as a function of reaction time. This was achieved using reaction-specific inlet systems, due to the differences in the reaction rates of the three alkene plus ozone reactions studied (see section 3.2.1 of this chapter and Chapters 7 and 8 for details). The spectrometer was also used to develop a reproducible, stable method to observe and record the PE spectrum of the first 2 PE bands of the unstable intermediate hypochlorous acid (HOCl), from reactions (3.1a) and (3.1b),

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Cl}_2 + \text{HgO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{Cl}_2\text{O} + \text{Hg}_2 \\
\text{Cl}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} & \rightarrow 2\text{HOCl}
\end{align*}
\]

(3.1a) (3.1b)

It was proposed to use this method in the future to record the threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum of HOCl at the synchrotron radiation facility, Elettra, in Trieste, Italy. A related objective was to record a pure PE spectrum for the first 3 PE bands of chlorine
monoxide (Cl\textsubscript{2}O) produced from reaction (3.1a). The results of the HOCl and Cl\textsubscript{2}O experiments are described further in Chapter 9.

The second spectrometer, referred to as the *big spectrometer*, was similar in design to that of the first (small spectrometer). It has a larger hemispherical analyser of mean radius of 20 cm. The size of the analyser is an important factor when considering the spectral resolution of the system and this is discussed in more detail in section 3.1.3. This spectrometer was used, in conjunction with the alkene-ozonolysis experiments performed on the small spectrometer, to measure the photoionisation cross-sections of the reactants and stable reaction products observed from the alkene plus ozone reactions using a differentially pumped flow-tube coupled to the ionisation region. The differentially pumped flow-tube set-up is discussed in section 3.2.2 of this chapter and the sampling procedure is described in Chapters 7 and 8. The thermal decomposition pathways of two fire suppressants, pentafluoroethane (HFC-125) and 2-H heptafluoropropane (FM-200), were studied on the big spectrometer (see Chapters 5 and 6 respectively) using a water cooled radio-frequency (RF) induction heating system coupled to the ionisation region. The RF heating system is described in section 3.3 of this chapter. Both the small and the big PE spectrometers are described in section 3.1.

The third spectrometer was used to record a well resolved first TPE band of the triatomic molecule SF\textsubscript{2}, with reduced contributions from S\textsubscript{2}, at the Elettra synchrotron source. The reactions used to prepare SF\textsubscript{2} for study by TPES were,

\[
\begin{align*}
F + OCS & \rightarrow SF + CO \\
SF + SF & \rightarrow SF\textsubscript{2} + S \\
S + S + M & \rightarrow S\textsubscript{2} + M
\end{align*}
\]

This spectrometer consisted of a 180° hemispherical analyser with a mean radius of 10 cm. The analyser and detector could be rotated through 75° with respect to the direction of linear polarisation of the photon source, in order to carry out angular distribution measurements as a function of photon energy. It was specifically built to be used with both polarised, tuneable synchrotron radiation and unpolarised He(I) radiation. The spectrometer utilises an electron lens system, to transmit electrons from the ionisation region towards the analyser region. By operating the analyser at fixed pass energy and
sweeping the photon energy a threshold photoelectron spectrum can be obtained. The operation of the TPE spectrometer is described in section 3.4.2.

The sampling procedures used and analysis of the experimental results obtained for each of the reactions and molecules studied are described in more detail in their respective chapters in this thesis. Only the instrumental details of the apparatus used, i.e. PE spectrometers and sampling equipment for each experiment will described in this chapter.

3.1 The Photoelectron Spectrometer

The main components of the PE spectrometers used throughout this work are a photon source, photoionisation or interaction region, an analyser region and a detector. As the designs of both the small and big PE spectrometers are essentially the same, with the only exception being the size of the analyser used, only one schematic diagram, representing both systems and showing all major components is required. This is shown in Figure 3.1.

![Schematic diagram of the photoelectron spectrometer used in this work.](image)

*Figure 3.1: Schematic diagram of the photoelectron spectrometer used in this work. F₁ and F₂ are the exit and entrance electron focus points. S₁ and S₂ are the entrance and exit slits respectively. I, is the ionisation chamber and A, is the analyser chamber.*
Figure 3.1 shows a cross-sectional view of the PE spectrometer with the photon source perpendicular to the vertical plane. The photon beam passes through the point labelled F₂. A helium discharge lamp is positioned on the side of the ionisation chamber. It provides a photon beam which enters the ionisation region from the side, at 90° with respect to the sample port shown in Figure 3.1. The photoionisation chamber, I, contains a reaction cell which is used to collimate the admitted samples. The ionisation chamber is positioned directly above a diffusion pump to ensure low pressure and good pumping efficiency are maintained within the interaction region. A gaseous sample can be introduced either from the side of the ionisation chamber through the reaction cell, coaxially aligned with the photon beam, or as shown in Figure 3.1, perpendicular to the photon source (see also Figure 3.2).

The 150° electron energy analyser, A, consists of two concentric hemispheres, to which equal and opposite voltages are applied [7]. This provides an electrostatic field which deflects electrons of defined energy to the detector. By sweeping the voltage difference between the hemispheres using a ramp generator, photoelectrons can be separated according to their kinetic energies [7-9]. Both ionisation and analyser chambers are maintained at low pressures, of the order of 10⁻⁶ torr. This reduces any collisions between the photoelectrons and residual gas-phase molecules, and ensures that the mean free path of the photoelectrons is greater than the distance travelled around the hemispheres.

The electrons are then detected using a channel electron multiplier (channeltron), which produces electrical pulses on electron impact. These pulses are amplified and counted on a ratemeter and can then be recorded using computer software.

Electron trajectories inside the spectrometer are easily perturbed by stray magnetic fields [7]. To reduce these field effects, the photoelectron spectrometer is constructed entirely of non-magnetic materials, notably Dural, an aluminium alloy, and uses three sets of mutually perpendicular Helmholtz coils [1]. The Helmholtz coils positioned around the spectrometer each have a direct current running through them to produce a field which counteracts that of the earth’s magnetic field in the direction perpendicular to the coils. This current is optimised each time before any experimentation is carried out, due to changes in local magnetic fields. This is achieved by recording the He(I) PE spectrum for argon as it is intense, and well established as having two distinct bands,
Ar⁺(2P\textsubscript{3/2}, 2P\textsubscript{1/2}) ← Ar(\textsuperscript{1}S\textsubscript{0})(3p)\textsuperscript{-1}, and optimising the signal intensity and resolution as the currents through the coil are changed [8].

Argon is also used to determine the resolution, (\(\Delta E_{1/2}\)), of the spectrometer. This is typically 20-30 meV, determined from the length, (\(\Delta L\)), between the two Ar(3p)\textsuperscript{-1} bands using equation 3.3, and the width at half height, (\(\Delta E_{1/2}\)), of the most intense Ar(3p)\textsuperscript{-1} component.

\[
\Delta E_{1/2} = \frac{178\text{meV} \times FWHM \left(\frac{\text{2P}_{3/2}}{\text{2P}_{1/2}}\right)}{\Delta L}
\]

where the Full Width Half Maximum, \(\Delta E_{1/2}\), is the width of the Ar⁺(2P\textsubscript{3/2}) ← Ar(\textsuperscript{1}S\textsubscript{0})(3p)\textsuperscript{-1} band at half its total band height. \(\Delta L\) represents the length separating the two bands, which is well established as 178 meV between the two ionic states, Ar⁺(2P\textsubscript{3/2}, 2P\textsubscript{1/2}) [8]. An oxygen spectrum is also recorded before each experiment to ensure that acceptable transmission can be obtained throughout the ionisation energy range.

3.1.1 The Photon Source

The u.v. photon source used in this work on both the small and the big PE spectrometers is a d.c. discharge in helium which produces an unpolarised photon emission of 58.43 nm (21.22 eV). The emission results from the transition, \(\textsuperscript{1}S\textsubscript{0}(1s^2) ← \textsuperscript{1}P\textsubscript{1}(1s^1 2p^1)\), in the neutral helium and is known as He(I)\(\alpha\) radiation. It is the main photon emission from excited helium, and is sufficiently energetic to remove an electron from orbitals involved in chemical bonding, i.e. the electrons occupying the valence shell of atoms or molecules [9]. He(I)\(\alpha\) refers to the transition between the first electronic excited state of the neutral molecule and the ground state of the neutral molecule. If a transition were to occur in the cation then the emitted radiation would be referred to as He(II) radiation. Other transitions, in neutral helium, can occur from the \(\textsuperscript{1}P\textsubscript{1}\) states with the 1s \(np\) configuration, where \(n = 3, 4, 5...\) etc, to the \(\textsuperscript{1}S\textsubscript{0}\) ground state, and these are referred to as He(I)\(\beta\), He(I)\(\gamma\), He(I)\(\delta\)...respectively. Small amounts of these He(I) lines are present in the discharge. However, their intensities relative to the He(I)\(\alpha\) line are small with the most intense, He(I)\(\beta\), being only \(ca. 1.3\%\) the intensity of the He(I)\(\alpha\) emission. In a PE spectrum, a PE band arising from He(I)\(\beta\) ionisation is commonly referred to as a shadow band. It is essentially a weaker version of the He(I)\(\alpha\) PE band occurring 1.87eV
higher in electron kinetic energy. The He(I) emission lines including their respective energies and relative intensities are shown in Table 3.1 below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>He(I) Line</th>
<th>Wavelength (nm)</th>
<th>Energy (eV)</th>
<th>Excited State ((^3P))</th>
<th>Relative Intensity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>α</td>
<td>58.43</td>
<td>21.22</td>
<td>2p</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β</td>
<td>53.73</td>
<td>23.09</td>
<td>3p</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γ</td>
<td>52.22</td>
<td>23.74</td>
<td>4p</td>
<td>0.13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δ</td>
<td>51.56</td>
<td>24.04</td>
<td>5p</td>
<td>0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ε</td>
<td>51.21</td>
<td>24.21</td>
<td>6p</td>
<td>&lt; 0.03</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Table 3.1: Comparison between the photons produced from the various neutral transitions which occur on discharging helium [7-9].*

Helium is admitted into the differentially pumped lamp at a pressure of ~0.5 torr through a quartz capillary where a discharge occurs between the anode and cathode. The current under operating conditions is typically 50 mA. The photons a then enter the spectrometer. Under normal operating conditions the He(I) photon flux is of the order of \(10^{11}\) photons sec\(^{-1}\) [7]. The lamp is differentially pumped using a rotary pump and a diffusion pump which is directly connected to the ionisation chamber. By differentially pumping the lamp, excess helium, which would otherwise reach the ionisation region and reduce the partial pressures of the sample gases and hence reduce the intensity of the target signal, can be removed. By reducing the pressure of the helium gas admitted and increasing the voltage and current, the discharge in helium can be made to emit more radiation from helium ions, i.e. He(II) radiation with photon energy of 40.81 eV. However, despite being possible to obtain such a photon energy, He(II) radiation was never used during the course of this work.

### 3.1.2 The Ionisation Chamber and the Reaction Cell

The discharge lamp is attached, externally to the side of the ionisation chamber. A reaction cell is attached to the inside of the ionisation chamber directly in line with the emitted photons from the lamp. Sample gases can be admitted along the same line as the photon source but from the opposite direction, i.e. through the reaction cell from the opposite side, or they can be admitted perpendicular to the photon source as is seen in the schematic diagram of the reaction cell in Figure 3.2. When a reaction is studied, all the reactants and reaction products are pumped into the reaction cell where they are photoionised. The photoelectrons produced propagate in all directions within the reaction cell. The cell contains two sets of adjustable focussing slits which allows only
photoelectrons emitted at 90° with respect to the photon source to enter the analyser region and be detected. However, before being detected, the emitted photoelectrons must pass through two further sets of adjustable focussing slits, entrance and exit slits, after leaving the reaction cell and these are shown as $S_1$ and $S_2$ respectively in Figure 3.1. In practice the spectrometer slit widths are adjusted to optimise the resolution and signal intensity. The signal-to-noise ratio and spectral resolution are also directly affected by contamination of any of the following components, the reaction cell, the entrance and exit slits, the ionisation chamber and the analyser chamber. Contamination can result in a build up of surface charge which can perturb the trajectories of the emitted photoelectrons resulting in a loss of resolution, intensity and a decrease in the signal-to-noise ratio. In order to reduce these effects all the components which are located within the ionisation region and the hemispheres in the analyser region are coated with a fine layer of colloidal graphite (DAG). This provides a conductive film which allows any build up of surface charge from contamination to be easily dissipated, helping maintain spectral resolution during an experiment. To avoid inelastic scattering of ejected photoelectrons, the ionisation and analyser chambers are each positioned directly above a diffusion pump (see Figure 3.1). This provides background operating pressures of $10^{-6}$ torr. Pressures typically do not exceed $10^{-5}$ torr in the ionisation chamber during an experiment when samples are admitted.

3.1.3 The Analyser Chamber

A 150° electrostatic hemispherical analyser is used on both the small and the big spectrometers throughout this work. The analyser chamber and the ionisation chamber are each pumped by diffusion pumps as seen in Figure 3.1. The pressure in the analyser region is typically $10^{-6}$ torr. The analyser consists of two hemispheres, an inner and an
outer sphere of radius $R_1$ and $R_2$ respectively to which equal and opposite voltages are applied, a positive voltage to the inner sphere and a negative voltage to the outer sphere. This is shown in Figure 3.3. Applying equal and opposite potentials to the hemispheres creates an electrostatic field between each sphere in the photoelectron trajectory region of which only photoelectrons of kinetic energy equal to $[10]$

$$KE = \frac{1}{2} V \left( \frac{(R_2 + R_1)}{(R_2 - R_1)} \right)$$

(3.4)

can reach the detector, where $V$ is the potential applied to the hemispheres. Sweeping this field by changing the applied potentials allows photoelectrons of different kinetic energies to be selected and transmitted through the analyser onto the detector. A ramp generator is used to sweep the voltages linearly applied to each sphere in order to obtain a photoelectron signal over a large electron kinetic energy range.

This type of analyser has a double focussing property. This means that photoelectrons can travel from the entrance to exit slits with numerous trajectories. This results in more electrons being detected and an improved signal-to-noise ratio i.e. enhanced sensitivity. This feature is invaluable for detecting electrons of low kinetic energies (< 8 eV). For an electron to orbit between both hemispheres, the stability of that orbit is dependent on

---

**Figure 3.3**: Schematic diagram of the 150° electron energy analyser. The central orbital radius, shown in red, is 10 cm for the small spectrometer and 20 cm for the big spectrometer.
the electrical force, \((eF)\), acting on the electron being equal to the centripetal force, 
\[
\left( \frac{mv^2}{R} \right)
\]
where, \(e\) is the electron charge, \(m\) is the mass, \(F\) is the electrical field, \(v\) is the electron velocity and \(R\) is the mean radius of the electron orbit. This is shown in red in Figure 3.3. The kinetic energy of an electron is given by equation 3.5.

\[
KE = \frac{1}{2}mv^2 = E \tag{3.5}
\]

Therefore for a stable orbit,

\[
E = \frac{1}{2}eFR \tag{3.6}
\]

Because of the finite entrance and exit slit widths shown as \(S_1\) and \(S_2\) respectively in Figure 3.1, variations in the electron orbital radius must be taken into consideration and equation 3.6 can be used to give,

\[
\Delta E = \frac{1}{2}eF\Delta R \tag{3.7}
\]

where \(\Delta E\) is the electron energy spread for a change in radius \(\Delta R\). The change in \(R, \Delta R\), due to finite slit widths, can be written as,

\[
\Delta R = \frac{\text{total slit width}}{2} = \frac{S}{2} \tag{3.8}
\]

where \(S\) is the total slit width. Thus the spread in energy of the electrons \((\Delta E)\) at a given energy \((E)\) depends on the geometry of the electron energy analyser. Equations 3.7 and 3.8 can be used to give [11],

\[
\frac{\Delta E}{E} = \frac{S}{2R} \tag{3.9}
\]

Therefore reducing the total slit width will reduce the energy spread of electrons, increasing the resolution whilst lowering the band intensity. Conversely, increasing the electron mean radial orbit, \(R\), at a given, \(S\), will increase the spectrometer’s resolution. In equation 3.7 and 3.9, \(\Delta E\), is the base width of a band.

For typical band shapes obtained with a hemispherical analyser, it has been shown that the half-width and the base-width are related via [11].
\[ \Delta E_{\text{Base}} = 2.3 \Delta E_{1/2} \]  

(3.10)

Therefore, combing equations 3.9 and 3.10 gives,

\[ \frac{\Delta E_{1/2}}{E} = \frac{S}{2R} \cdot \frac{1}{2.3} \]  

(3.11)

This equation therefore gives the instrumental contribution to the experimental resolution arising from the geometric parameters of the analyser and the slits. Contributions to the resolution of the spectrometer other than those determined by these instrumental factors, which are smaller, are from line broadening in the photon source, Doppler broadening and self-reversal [12, 13].

Doppler broadening is the broadening of spectral lines caused by the thermal motions of the target atoms or molecules. It can be reduced by operating at reduced sample temperatures. Self-reversal refers to unexcited helium in the path of the photon flux. The core of the flux is more highly absorbed relative to the outer helium flux because the emission is from “hot” helium and absorption is by “cold” helium. This can cause a build up in intensity along the width of the photon beam increasing the line width. Local contact potentials also contribute to line broadening and so surfaces are coated with a layer of DAG to reduce this effect. Taking these factors, along with instrumental contributions, into consideration, the typical operating resolution of both the small and the big PE spectrometers used in this work is 20-30 meV as measured for the (3p)^1 ionisation of argon with a count rate of \(~3 \times 10^4\) counts sec\(^{-1}\).

3.1.4 Detector and Electronics

The photoelectrons which pass through the exit slits are detected by a channel electron multiplier, also called a channeltron. This is a spirally shaped glass tube coated in a semi conductive film. The front of the channeltron is earthed and a \(+2.5\) kV potential is applied to the other end. By applying a large positive potential to the multiplier, the photoelectrons are accelerated through the tube structure. When a photoelectron is incident on the semi conductive material of the channeltron, a secondary emission process takes place.

The induced emission causes a cascade effect, where for each electron incident on the material between one and three electrons are produced as secondary emitters [14].
These secondary emitted electrons are then accelerated along the tube and when incident on the surface they produce another series of secondary emitters and so on. This process is shown in Figure 3.4. The signal from the channeltron is first sent to a pre-amplifier and then it is further amplified before being sent to a ratemeter. The output signal from the ratemeter is recorded using a chart recorder or the output from the amplifier is recorded on a computer using software coded in C.

3.2 Inlet Systems

3.2.1 A Simple Glass Inlet System

All reactions investigated with simple inlet systems, similar in design to those shown in Figure 3.5 and 3.6, were studied using the small PE spectrometer. Glass inlet systems (made from borosilicate glass) can be added to the ionisation chamber of a PE spectrometer in order to study gas-phase reactions as a function of mixing distance or temperature as they are relatively unreactive and can be heated under vacuum, to working temperatures (strain point) of around 510 °C [15]. The ozonolysis of the selected alkene molecules was performed using three different inlet systems designed specifically for each alkene under investigation. The basic inlet system, used for O₃ + 2-methypropene (2MP) and O₃ + 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene (DMB), consists of two concentric glass tubes, where the inner tube is movable with

![Figure 3.4: Schematic diagram of the electron cascade process which occurs in the channeltron when an electron is incident on its surface [14].](image1)

![Figure 3.5: Schematic diagram of two different glass inlet systems.](image2)
respect to the outer tube. This is shown in Figure 3.5. The alkene was introduced via the
top of the tube whilst the ozone was introduced via the side arm. 50 cm long glass inlet
tubes were used to study 2MP and DMB with constricted ends of inner diameters of 0.5
mm and 1.5 mm respectively. Each inlet tube had inner and outer diameters of 10 and
12 mm respectively. For 2MP and DMB, spectra were recorded every 5 cm from 50 cm
to 0 cm. The input flow rates of each reagent were controlled using needle valves. The
inner tube was moveable and that meant that reactions could be studied as function of
reaction mixing distance. For 2MP and DMB, two baratron pressure transducers,
located at 10 cm and 48 cm from the bottom of each inlet, were used to monitor the
pressures changes as a function of reaction mixing distance. By taking pressure
differential measurements at these two points on the inlet tube during a reaction at
known partial pressures, flow rates \((F)\) and hence linear flow velocities could be
calculated at each reaction mixing distance using the Poiseuille equation [16-18],

\[
F = \left(\frac{P_1^2 - P_2^2}{P_0}\right) \times \frac{\pi r^4}{16L\eta}
\]

(3.12)

where, \(P_1\) and \(P_2\) are the first and second pressure measurements, \(P_0\) is the atmospheric
pressure, \(L\) is the length of the flow-tube or inlet system between the points of pressure
measurement for \(P_1\) and \(P_2\), and \(\eta\) is the total gas viscosity. Knowing the linear flow
velocities of the gases in the inlet system at known reaction mixing distance meant that
a reaction time for a given distance could be determined. Using this information
reaction distances can be converted to reaction times (see Chapters 7 and 8).

For the reaction ethene plus ozone, a 30 m long open ended inlet system with inner and
outer diameters of 10 and 12 mm respectively, was used. Of the three alkenes studied
ethene undergoes the slowest reaction with ozone, having an estimated room
temperature rate coefficient of 1.72x10^{-18} cm^3 molecules^{-1} s^{-1} compared to that of 2MP
and DMB with room temperature rate coefficients of 1.13x10^{-17} and 1.13x10^{-15} cm^3
molecules^{-1} s^{-1} respectively [19]. Hence, in the ethene case the inlet system used had to
be long enough to ensure that ethene underwent complete reaction with ozone by the
time it reached the photon beam [20]. A diagram of this inlet system is shown in Figure
3.6.
Figure 3.6: Schematic diagram of the 30 m long inlet system used to study ethene plus ozone at mixing distances every 5 m.

The inlet system was constructed from 30 m of plastic tubing reinforced with 4 cm long glass tubes, with a 10 mm inner diameter, running throughout the inside length of the plastic tubing with gas mixing points positioned every 5 m. Due to the potentially explosive nature of this reaction, an open ended tube was used to couple the inlet to the ionisation chamber [20]. Pressure measurements were recorded using baratron pressure transducers attached to the vacuum taps every 5 m from the point of ionisation. Spectra were obtained at mixing distances every 5 m from 30 m to 0 m, for the ethene plus ozone reaction. The operation of the inlet systems used is discussed further in Chapter 7.

To generate F atoms needed for reaction (3.2a) for the SF$_2$ work, a microwave discharge (2.45 GHz) of flowing 5% F$_2$ in helium was used. An inlet system, similar to that shown in Figure 3.5, 20 cm long with inner and outer diameters of 10 mm and 12 mm respectively, was coated in teflon to prevent the fluorine atoms attacking the glass (the moveable inner tube was also teflon coated). The microwave cavity was attached to an alumina tube fitted to the side arm, which was attached to the main body of the outer tube via a 90° bend to prevent low energy electrons produced from the discharge reaching the ionisation region. The reason for using an alumina section of the inlet system for the microwave cavity is to avoid the flowing discharge attacking the glass
and to prevent the teflon melting from the heat which is produced. For the F + OCS reaction, F₂/He was admitted via the side arm and passed through the discharge to yield F atoms. OCS was admitted via the top central inlet.

For the HOCl and Cl₂O work, an open ended straight glass inlet tube, 35 cm long with inner and outer diameters of 10 and 12 mm respectively was used. A glass frit of porosity grade 0 was placed 15 cm from the bottom of the inlet to prevent any solid materials, i.e. HgO powder and glass wool, from entering the ionisation chamber. A B20 cone joint was used at the top in order to provide an entrance wide enough to facilitate easy sample introduction and to aid in the removal of used materials during cleaning.

Simple glass inlet systems are very useful in studying gas-phase reactions qualitatively. Studying reactions and sampled molecules quantitatively can be achieved by interfacing a differentially pumped flow-tube to a PE spectrometer. This application also has the advantage in that rate coefficients as well as number densities and flow velocities can be obtained.

3.2.2 A Differentially Pumped Flow-Tube

In general, flow-tubes are very versatile in that they can be used to study reactions over a range of pressures and temperatures, e.g. ≤ 400 torr [21, 22] and 200-600 K respectively under specific flow conditions (laminar or turbulent flow) [23, 24]. Flow-tubes are widely used and preferred over techniques such as flash photolysis, for reaction kinetics studies near 300 K [24]. The instrument used in this work is operated at ambient temperature and at low pressures (1-10 torr) under laminar flow conditions. It is shown in Figure 3.7. In order to interface the high pressure of the flow-tube (1-10 torr) with the low pressure of the ionisation chamber of the spectrometer, (1₀⁻⁶ torr), the flow-tube is operated with two stages of differential pumping [25]. This is a technique applied when an interface exists between two systems which have large pressure differences [16-18, 25]. Three pumps are required in order to obtain the desired pressures within the flow-tube used in this work, two Leybold D25B rotary pumps and a larger Edwards SV-200 rotary pump which also maintains the desired flow rate in the flow-tube. The differentially pumped flow-tube coupled to the large spectrometer was used in determining the photoionisation cross-sections (PI-CSs) of the reactants and
stable reaction products observed from the alkene ozonolysis experiments performed using the glass inlet system, described previously in section 3.2.1, on the small spectrometer. These measurements are summarised in Tables 7.1 and 8.1 of Chapters 7 and 8.

![Schematic diagram of a differentially pumped flow-tube coupled to a photoelectron spectrometer](image)

**Figure 3.7:** Schematic diagram of a differentially pumped flow-tube coupled to a photoelectron spectrometer [23].

Chamber 1 is operated at a total pressure of ~3 torr which is controlled by the SV-200 pump, connected to port c. Port a, provides the carrier gas (typically helium) with linear flow velocities of 3 ms\(^{-1}\) to 40 ms\(^{-1}\)[20]. Chambers 2 and 3 are pumped by two D25B rotary pumps, connected to d and e in Figure 3.7, and have total pressures of ~10\(^{-1}\) and ≤ 10\(^{-2}\) torr respectively [23]. Each chamber is separated by a thin teflon disc. The teflon discs each have a hole of a specific diameter located through their centre. This hole permits sample transfer to occur from one end of the flow-tube to the ionisation region of the spectrometer. Depending on the rate coefficients for a given reaction, the holes in the teflon discs separating each chamber can be altered accordingly to allow more sample throughput by using a wider hole for fast reactions or restrict sample throughput using a smaller hole for slower reactions.
The differentially pumped flow-tube, like the simple inlet systems, is connected to the ionisation chamber of the spectrometer at 15° to the vertical [23]. It is coated internally with teflon to reduce interactions between gases and the surface of the walls of the inner tube. The reactant gas is added via a movable injector located at the top of the flow-tube. The carrier gas, $a$, and sample gas, $b$, are added from the side of the flow-tube, as can be seen from Figure 3.7. The character of the flow in the flow-tube when conducting an experiment should be laminar, yielding a parabolic radial velocity profile of the gas as it flows through the length of the tube, providing a maximum velocity of the gas at the centre of the flow-tube [16-18]. This can be checked by calculating the dimensionless Reynolds number, $R_e$ [26], given by,

$$ R_e = \frac{\rho \bar{v} L}{\eta} \quad (3.13) $$

where, $\rho$ is the gas density, $\bar{v}$ is the average linear flow velocity, $L$ is the length of the tube and $\eta$ is the absolute viscosity for the binary gas mixture. If $R_e$ is less than 2300 the flow is laminar and if it is above 4000 the flow is turbulent. In between 2300 and 4000, both laminar and turbulent flow exists; this is known as transition flow [27]. For kinetics experiments, it is important to ensure that $R_e < 2300$ i.e. the flow-tube is operated under conditions of laminar flow (or plug flow). Operating under laminar flow and pseudo-first order conditions, it is assumed that the concentration of the monitored reagent depends only upon the axial position and that the reactant transport in the axial direction is exclusively due to convection (i.e. axial diffusion is negligible). The laminar flow (or plug flow) approximation is only accurate when axial diffusion and radial concentration gradients are negligible [28].

By changing the reactant mixing distance from the hole in the teflon separating-disc located between chambers 1 and 2, using the moveable injector, reaction rate coefficient measurements can be carried out at a fixed reagent partial pressure by recording PE spectra as a function of reaction mixing distance. It is assumed that when the reagents and products pass through the hole between chamber 1 and 2 the reaction is effectively frozen [23]. For the reaction $A + B \rightarrow Products$, the reaction rate can be written as,

$$ Rate = k[A][B] \quad (3.14) $$
where $k$ is the reaction rate coefficient and $[A]$ and $[B]$ are reactant concentrations. Rate coefficient measurements are made by measuring the product or reactant concentrations with the moveable injector at different reaction times while the reactant flow rate is held constant [23]. First-order reaction rates depend solely on one reactant and so the rate coefficient can be easily determined. However, measuring second-order reaction rates for two reactants can be difficult as both the reactants have to be monitored simultaneously. The rate of the second-order reaction $A + B \rightarrow \text{Products}$ can be written as [29, 30].

$$-\frac{d[A]}{dt} = -\frac{d[B]}{dt} = k_2 [A][B] \quad (3.15)$$

This integrates to give,

$$\log_e \left( \frac{[B_f]}{[B_0]} \right) = \left( [B_0] - [A_0] \right) k_2 t \quad (3.16)$$

where $k_2$ is the second-order rate coefficient, and $[A_0]$ and $[B_0]$ are the concentrations of $[A]$ and $[B]$ at zero time.

If the concentration of $[B]$ is much greater than that of $[A]$, then the concentration of $[B]$ is effectively constant i.e. $[B] \gg [A]$, then using,

$$-\frac{dA}{dt} = k_2 [A][B] \quad (3.17)$$

This will become, when $[B] \gg [A]$,

$$-\frac{dA}{dt} = k'[A] \quad (3.18)$$

where, $k' = k_2 [B]$. Then equation 3.18 gives,

$$\int \frac{-dA}{(A)} = \int k'dt \quad (3.19)$$

Then on integrating and assuming when $t = 0$, $A = A_0$ gives,

$$\log_e \left( \frac{A_0}{A} \right) = k' t \quad (3.20)$$
As a result, the pseudo first-order rate coefficient, \( k' \) at known concentration of \([B]\) is given by the gradient of the line when plotting \( \log_e \left( \frac{A_0}{A} \right) \) against time, \( t \). \( k' \) and \( k \) are related via,

\[
k' = k[B]
\]  

(3.21)

If \( k' \) is determined at different known concentrations of \([B]\), then \( k' \) plotted against \([B]\) would give \( k_2 \), which is the second-order rate coefficient \([29, 30]\). The only previous use of PES in a kinetics study is the work of Wang \textit{et al.}, who studied the first-order rearrangement of a number of compounds as a function of time and derived first-order rate coefficients. Examples of the reactions studied were the isomerisation of \( \text{CH}_3\text{NC} \) to \( \text{CH}_3\text{CN} \) and isomerisation of \( \text{SSF}_2 \) to \( \text{FSSF} \) \([31-33]\).

For a reaction \( [A] \rightarrow [B] \), the first-order rate coefficient, \( k_1 \), is given by,

\[
Rate = k_1 [A]
\]  

(3.22)

The first-order rate coefficient is therefore determined by the loss of \([A]\) as a function of time; \( \log_e [A] \) is plotted against time to yield a slope of \(-k\). Wang \textit{et al.} reported the first-order rate coefficients of selected compounds by plotting \( \log_e[A]/[B] \) versus time. This resulted in the rate coefficients obtained being in error.

Since the work of Wang, PES has been used to measure the rate coefficient of a second-order reaction. This was done by Dyke \textit{et al.} of the Southampton PES Group, where the rate coefficient for the atmospherically important reaction between molecular chlorine and dimethyl sulphide (DMS) was determined \([23]\),

\[
\text{Cl}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 \rightarrow \text{Products}
\]  

(3.23)

using the differentially pumped flow-tube described. Measured under pseudo first-order conditions with \([\text{Cl}_2] \gg [\text{DMS}]\), the rate coefficient was determined by measuring the relative concentration of DMS using the intensity of its first PE band and changing the reaction times using the moveable injector on the flow-tube at a fixed chlorine partial pressure. This was then repeated at different partial pressures of chlorine. Plotting \( \log_e \left( \frac{[\text{DMS}]_0}{[\text{DMS}]_t} \right) \) against reaction time at a known concentration of chlorine gave a gradient which was equal to the pseudo first-order rate coefficient, \( k' \). The second-order rate coefficient was then determined from the slope of the plot \( k' \) versus \([\text{Cl}_2]\) concentration.
During the course of this project the differentially pumped flow-tube was only used for the photoionisation cross-section (PI-CS) measurements to allow reaction branching ratios to be determined for alkene plus ozone reactions. See Chapters 7 and 8 for details describing the determination of branching ratios.

3.3 High Temperature PES

Solids and liquids of low vapour pressure have been studied using PES in the Southampton group, by gradually heating the sample to increase the vapour pressure, using a radio-frequency (RF) induction heating system, in order to obtain a PE spectrum [34, 35].

In this work an RF induction heating system has been used to study the thermal decomposition of two hydrofluorocarbon (HFC) fire suppressants, pentafluoroethane (HFC-125) and 2-H heptafluoropropane (FM-200). Induction heating has many advantages for investigating the thermal decomposition pathways of molecules and was chosen for the following reasons,

1. High temperatures can be achieved (> 2500 K) and RF interference in the detection circuitry can be eliminated using pulsed gating techniques.
2. The furnace itself is not in direct contact with the induction coils and so heat loss via thermal conduction is eliminated.
3. The high temperatures are localised within the furnace and so radiative heat losses are also minimised.
4. The heating method does not generate any thermal noise and can be used comfortably at temperatures up to 2500 K [34, 35].

The radio frequency induction heating method can be described as follows; when an alternating electrical current is applied to the primary of a transformer, an alternating magnetic field is created. If the secondary of the transformer is located within the magnetic field produced, an electric current will be induced. These currents are known as eddy currents. In induction heating the same principle applies. In the heating system used in this work, the RF power supply sends an alternating current through a water cooled, highly conductive copper tube, 3 mm in diameter, wound in a helix formation of ~6 turns. The coil serves as the transformer primary and the part to be heated, the
susceptor, becomes the secondary. When a conducting material, the susceptor, (e.g. a graphite furnace) is placed within the induction coil and enters the magnetic field, circulating eddy currents are induced within the material. Eddy currents flow along the surface of the susceptor, giving rise to heating without any direct contact between the material and the coil [36, 37]. This is shown in Figure 3.8.

![Figure 3.8: Schematic diagram depicting the movement of currents induced from the RF in the coils and susceptor.](image)

The induced heat generated by the current flowing in the susceptor is given by,

\[ \text{Induced heat} \propto I^2R \]  
\[ (3.24) \]

where \( I \) is the induced current and \( R \) is the resistance of the susceptor material. The resistance \( (R_T) \) of a conductor can be expressed in terms of its resistivity at a given temperature, \( \rho(T) \), its length, \( l \), and its cross-sectional area, \( A \), as,

\[ R_T = \rho(T) \frac{A}{l} \]  
\[ (3.25) \]

It can be seen from equations 3.24 and 3.25 that the heating effect is greatest for large induced currents and highly resistive materials. Since the current is directly proportional to the rate of change of the inducing magnetic field, high frequencies (radio-
frequencies) are used to obtain high temperatures. Radio-frequencies of 1 MHz are used in this work.

When a potential is applied to a conducting material, e.g. a graphite susceptor, with a direct current, the direct current flows uniformly throughout the entire cross-sectional area of the susceptor. If, however, an alternating current, of any frequency (RF in this work), is applied to the same susceptor, the current is forced away from the centre of the susceptor and flows on its outer surface. This is due to the acceleration of an electric charge in an alternating current [37]. This accelerated charge produces electromagnetic waves that directly cancel out the propagation of the flowing potential toward the centre of the susceptor. This is known as the skin effect.

The skin effect causes the effective resistance of the conductor to increase with the frequency of the current. At high frequencies the skin depth becomes smaller. At very high frequencies (~1 MHz), the current no longer flows within the susceptor, but effectively flows on its surface. The depth to which currents will penetrate a given conducting material is given by,

\[
\text{Skin depth} = \frac{2 \times \rho(T)}{\sqrt{\mu_0 \times \mu_r(T) \times \omega}}
\]  \hspace{1cm} (3.26)

where \(\rho(T)\) is the resistivity in ohms per metre at temperature, \(T(K)\), \(\mu_0\) is the magnetic permeability of free space, \(\mu_r(T)\) is the relative permeability at a given temperature and \(\omega\) is the angular frequency of the RF current. Since \(\mu_0 = 4\pi \times 10^{-7} \text{ kgms}^{-2} \text{A}^{-1}\), where A, is in amperes, equation 3.26 can be expressed as,

\[
\text{Skin depth} = \frac{1}{2\pi} \sqrt{\frac{\rho(T) \times 10^{-7}}{\mu_r(T) \times f}}
\]  \hspace{1cm} (3.27)

where \(f\) is the RF frequency. As a result of this, the susceptor is machined as closely as possible to the theoretical skin depth without compromising its structural integrity. The susceptor (furnace) used in this work was a graphite tube, 5 cm x 1 cm, with a wall thickness of ca. 1-2 mm. The thickness of the furnace was restricted by the machining techniques used in its manufacture and also its durability when being handled. The base
of the graphite furnace was drilled and tapped to allow a graphite end-cap to be screwed on.

![Diagram of graphite furnace assembly](image)

**Figure 3.9:** Schematic diagram of the furnace assembly used to study the thermal decomposition of HFC-125 and FM-200.

The end cap had a 2 mm hole drilled through its centre. The cap was used to increase the residence time of the gas under study within the furnace. A schematic diagram of the ionisation chamber and furnace assembly used is shown in Figure 3.9. The graphite furnace, D, was connected to a 20 cm long alumina rod, I, using a tantalum pin, C. Carbon felt, E, was wrapped around the graphite furnace to reduce any radiative heat losses. The furnace and carbon felt were inserted inside an electrically insulating boron nitride ceramic tube which prevented the circuit shorting by segregating the RF coils, F, from the furnace. A boron nitride ceramic tube was used due to its high melting point and stability when in contact with carbon felt at temperatures over 2000 K. A water cooled shield, H, is used to cover the entire furnace set-up, including the water cooled RF coils, G. The water cooled shield is attached to the outer flange of the RF inlet system and therefore earthed. The shield is necessary to prevent excessive thermal electron emission in the ionisation region which can increase background count rates and give poor signal-to-noise when recording PE spectra. It is also used to reduce any
radiative thermal emissions and to help collimate the sample reducing chemical contamination on the slits. The sample is introduced via the alumina rod and its path to the point of photoionisation, $L$, is represented by the red arrow in Figure 3.9. The sample path is further collimated towards the reaction cell by capping the water cooled shield with a brass disc which is inserted into a screw-cap fitting attached to the base of the shield, $M$. The brass disc cap is similar to that used on the graphite furnace having a hole through its centre of ca. 2 mm. Various end caps, for both the graphite furnace and the water cooled shield, machined with different hole diameters, were used in order to increase or decrease the residence time of the sample in the furnace and to direct the flow to the photoionisation region while minimising any sample loss. To avoid interference caused by the RF signal when detecting photoelectrons, the RF supply is gated at mains frequency of 50 Hz. Photoelectrons detected are then recorded during each gated pulse. This is shown in Figure 3.10. The internal furnace temperature was measured using a K-type (Ni-Cr/Ni-Al) thermocouple in contact with the internal wall of the susceptor. This procedure could be used to measure internal furnace wall temperatures up to 1300 °C. Above 1300 °C, in the range 1300-2000 °C, an optical pyrometer was used to determine the external furnace wall temperature, by viewing the outside of the furnace through a window on the ionisation chamber. By separately plotting the measured temperatures from both the thermocouple and optical pyrometer as a function of the applied heater voltage, the thermocouple temperatures could be extrapolated to higher values.

**Figure 3.10:** Representation of the gating sequence used for the RF signal during pyrolysis; (a), represents the applied voltage; (b), shows the voltage applied with the smoothing capacitor removed from the RF supply; (c), shows the applied voltage with the rectifier valve removed; (d), shows the RF signal produced in the induction coil and (e), shows the points, out of step with the RF signal, at which data is recorded [33].
(than 1300 °C) and the optical pyrometer values could be extrapolated to lower values. The experimental temperatures quoted in this work (see Chapters 5 and 6) were the thermocouple measurements up to 1300 °C and the extrapolated thermocouple values up to 2000 °C (i.e. the internal wall temperatures of the furnace, which were compared with the temperatures measured with the pyrometer above 1300 °C to check that the values were reasonable; at each heater voltage the pyrometer temperature (outer wall temperature) was always slightly lower than the thermocouple temperature over the temperature range that both measurements could be made, ca. 750-1800 °C).

The results obtained for thermal decomposition of pentafluoroethane (HFC-125) and 2H-heptafluoropropane (FM-200) with the RF induction heating system described in this chapter are presented in Chapter 5 and 6 respectively.

3.4 Synchrotron Radiation PES Studies

A synchrotron radiation source is a continuous, polarised source of radiation. The radiation is emitted by electrons which are circulated in curved trajectories at velocities close to the speed of light [38]. The radiation emitted by these electrons can be selected and tuned continuously from the far-infrared region (50-1000 μm) to the hard X-ray region (0.1-0.01 nm) using a monochromator [38]. Synchrotron radiation was used in this work to record the first bands in the threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum of the triatomic molecules HO₂ and SF₂. The detection of threshold electrons is achieved by using a three element lens system which focuses low energy electrons towards the analyser of the spectrometer. A TPE spectrum is then obtained by sweeping the photon energy. This results in a significant improvement in spectral resolution to approximately 5 meV compared to conventional PES which has an operating spectral resolution of typically 20-30 meV. TPE spectra provide complementary information to conventional PE spectra [39].

3.4.1 The ELETTRA Synchrotron Radiation Source

The results obtained for the work carried out on the triatomic molecule SF₂, discussed in Chapter 9, were obtained at the Elettra synchrotron radiation facility, on the circular polarised beamline, BL 4.2. Elettra is a third generation synchrotron radiation laboratory located in Basovizza, Trieste, Italy. The synchrotron is composed of a linear
accelerator (LINAC), a transfer line and a storage ring. The electrons are first generated in a LINAC and then injected into the ring using an electron gun via the transfer line. The electron gun contains ceramic discs which are heated to very high temperatures in order to produce electrons for the storage ring. The LINAC operates at 3 GHz and generates a pulse of electrons every 2 ns that are accelerated up to energies of 1.2 GeV. The electrons are then drawn out of the electron gun by a high electric field of ~100 kV and accelerated through various RF structures. The LINAC itself is 66 m long, and includes the electron gun, a low energy section and seven high energy sections, each 6 m long. The electrons are then transported to the ring by a transfer line, which consists of a series of deflection and focusing magnets. Both the LINAC and the transfer line are located below ground so that they do not interfere with the beamlines. Pulses of electrons are gradually fed into the ring until the desired current is achieved. The storage ring operates at 2.0 or 2.4 GeV and feeds over 24 beamlines offering photon energies from 0.002 eV to 20 keV with a spectral brightness of up to $10^{19}$ photons/s/mm$^2$/mrad$^2$/0.1% bandwidth [40]. Left alone, electrons would travel along straight trajectories [40]. In order to manipulate the path of the electrons as they travel around the storage ring they must be deflected accordingly. Due to the high energies reached by the fast moving electrons in the storage ring, high strength magnets are required to control their trajectories. The effect of magnetic deflection on an electron is governed by the Lorentz force, which is the force exerted by an electromagnetic field (magnet) on an electron as it circumnavigates the storage ring. It is given by,

$$Force = Q [E_{field} + (v \times M_{field})]$$  \hspace{1cm} (3.28)

where, $Force$ is in Newton’s, $Q$ is the electric charge of the particle in coulombs, $E_{field}$ is the electric field in volts per metre, $v$ is the velocity of the particle in metres per second and $M_{field}$ is the magnetic field in teslas. The storage ring is made up of four types of magnets which are used to provide the magnetic fields required to ensure the stability of the path taken by the electrons as they travel around the ring. The four types of magnets are,

1. Bending magnets. These deflect the circulating beam into a closed circular path.
2. Quadrupole magnets. These are used to focus the beam.
3. Sextupole magnet. These compensate for any chromatic and non-linear effects.
4. Steerer magnets. These perform small adjustments to the circular trajectories.
The ring has a circumference of 260 m and is made up of twelve identical groups of magnets. Two parameters are important in describing the beam, its brightness and its emittance. The brightness of the beam is proportional to the transverse size and divergence of the beam, while the emittance is the area occupied by the beam in phase space. The smaller the emittance is, the better the quality of the beam and the longer its lifetime. To obtain a small emittance, the beam is strongly focused by ring quadrupole and bending magnets. Four single RF cell cavities, operating at 500 MHz, are used to compensate for the energy lost by the electrons when emitting synchrotron radiation within the storage ring [41]. The LINAC, the transfer line and the storage ring all operate under ultra high vacuum to minimise collisions of electrons with residual molecules. This avoids the loss of electrons and increases the lifetime of the beam.

3.4.1.1 The Circular Polarised Beamline, BL 4.2

The BL 4.2, also called the circular polarised beamline, provides radiation in the photon energy range from 5 to 1000 eV. The radiation is produced by a series of electromagnetic elliptical wigglers (EEWs) and undulators, which force the electrons to follow a helical orbit around the EEW axis. These are made from an array of electromagnets. These provide vertical and horizontal magnetic fields which are applied to the electrons as they travel through the storage ring. This is shown in Figure 3.11. The intensity of the vertical magnetic field can be changed by moving the permanent magnets, modifying the vertical displacement of the electrons. The horizontal displacement of the electrons is changed by varying the intensity of the current which passes through the magnets. An important characteristic of synchrotron radiation is the fact that it is polarised. An electromagnetic wave is a propagating perturbation of the electromagnetic field. The electromagnetic field includes an electric field vector and a magnetic field vector. The electric field and the magnetic field perturbations of a wave occur.
perpendicular to one another and also perpendicular to the wave motion. If these fields rotate as a function of time then the wave is circularly polarised. As the emission of EEWs and undulators is linearly polarised with respect to the undulation plane, fixing the vertical field of the permanent magnets on the undulator fixes the electric field (and therefore the magnetic field) perturbation of the wave. When the directions of these fields are fixed along the axis of the propagating wave then the corresponding wave is linearly polarised. In order to obtain a smooth spectral distribution when recording PE spectra, the alignment of each array of undulator magnets is of fundamental importance.

This requires generating constructive interference from the electromagnetic field produced by the electron as it traverses the undulator. This is done by monitoring a signal at a given harmonic of the radiation at fixed photon energy and moving the permanent magnets accordingly as to compensate for the spectral shift of the signal being monitored. Linear polarisation was used throughout the work carried out on the synchrotron. Polarising the radiation linearly allows for the determination of angular distribution information of molecules and is discussed in sections 2.2 of Chapter 2 and 3.4.2.5 in this chapter. To cover the broad photon energy range efficiently, two independent monochromators are used, one working at normal incidence, giving radiation from 5 to 35 eV, and one working at grazing incidence, giving radiation from 30 to 1200 eV. During this work, only the monochromator operating at normal incidence was used [42]. A schematic layout of the normal incidence monochromator (NIM) configuration is shown in Figure 3.12.

![Gas Phase Beamline – Optical Layout](image)

*Figure 3.12: Schematic layout of the BL 4.2 in Normal Incidence Configuration [39].*

In Figure 3.12, the switching mirror is vertical and diverts the radiation horizontally. It protects the later optical components from radiation from the “hard” portion of the spectrum. The second mirror is a pre-focusing mirror and has a toroidal shape. This focuses the radiation onto the entrance slit of the monochromator. The monochromator
Experimental Techniques

is composed of a mirror, positioned horizontally, that deflects the radiation vertically and a set of spherical gratings, (gold or aluminium) that diffract the radiation and focus it onto the exit slit. The radiation is then re-focused by a vertical toroid mirror which diverts the radiation in the horizontal plane. The position of these mirrors can be manually adjusted to optimise the photon flux, which is measured at the back of the spectrometer using a photodiode sensor. A set of valves are present along the beamline to protect the vacuum contained within the beamline and storage ring. They shut automatically if the pressure rises above preset limits. The last valve is a window valve, transparent to visible radiation, which allows for the alignment of the spectrometer with the photon beam.

3.4.2 The Synchrotron Photoelectron Spectrometer

The main components of the synchrotron PE spectrometer are similar to the small and big PE spectrometers, previously described. It consists of a suitable radiation source, an ionisation region, an analyser region, a detector and a recorder to acquire data. Figure 3.13 shows a schematic diagram of the spectrometer in the plane perpendicular to the photon beam. The spectrometer is evacuated to a sufficiently low pressure to allow electrons to be cleanly transmitted from the point of photoionisation to the detector. In order to prevent contamination of the monochromator optics on the beamline, a high degree of sample differential pumping was employed by using separate turbomolecular pumps to evacuate each chamber individually. The sample gases are introduced via an inlet system (described in section 3.2.1) into the ionisation region where they interact with the photon beam.

To improve the pumping efficiency, the interaction region is enclosed by two metallic boxes, shown in Figure 3.13, that are differentially pumped. Figure 3.14 shows how the differential pumping is applied within the ionisation region as a result of these boxes. Both boxes are coated with DAG in order to reduce any local electric fields that would affect the trajectory of the emitted photoelectrons. The first box (inner box) is earthed. The ejected photoelectrons travel from the interaction region and through the electron lens system before reaching the analyser region. This lens system allows the spectrometer to be used in a fixed or constant pass energy mode in order to obtain PE and TPE spectra. The analyser consists of two concentric 180° hemispheres with a mean
radius of 10 cm. The electrons are detected by a channeltron (previously described in section 3.1.4).

The spectrometer is made entirely of non-magnetic materials to avoid any local electric and magnetic fields perturbing the trajectories of the emitted photoelectrons. Helmholtz coils are used to counteract any local magnetic fields, including the earth’s magnetic field, on the small and big PE spectrometers discussed in section 3.1. However, due to their size, they are impractical for use at a synchrotron. As the synchrotron spectrometer was regularly transported from the PES laboratory in Southampton to the synchrotron radiation facility in Trieste, Italy, an alternative solution to using Helmholtz coils was necessary. This involved the use of \( \mu \)-metal shielding. The ionisation region, lenses, analyser and detector were shielded from external interfering electrostatic fields by covering each component internally with \( \mu \)-metal on the inner vacuum chamber walls. \( \mu \)-metal is an alloy which has a high magnetic permeability that constrains stray magnetic fields to pass within it rather than through it. Therefore the photoelectrons will not be affected by any local magnetic fields.
The spectrometer was designed so that its height and lateral position could be manually adjusted to align the ionisation region with the focal point of the photon beam before connecting it directly to the beamline. The frame of the spectrometer was attached to a plate which allowed the system to be rotated around the horizontal axis for fine adjustments to the final alignment.

3.4.2.1 The Three Element Lens System

A three element lens system was used to transmit electrons from the point of ionisation to the analyser region, allowing the spectrometer to be operated at fixed pass energy. This enables spectra to be recorded with constant resolution and transmission. The lens system is shown in Figure 3.13 and 3.16. The lenses are made from three cylindrical aluminium elements, coaxially aligned and electrically insulated from each other.

The first lens element is electrically connected to the outer box to which an extraction voltage can be applied (an extraction voltage is only applied when recording TPE spectra, see section 3.4.3 for details) otherwise the first lens element is earthed. The voltage applied to the second lens element, \( V_2 \), is used to focus the electrons onto the entrance slit of the analyser. It acts as a focusing element so that the exit slit of the lens system becomes the optical mirror image of the entrance slit. \( V_2 \) can be determined experimentally by optimising the voltage applied to it for a particular photoelectron signal at different kinetic energies, at fixed pass energy. The optimum voltage values that give the most intense and well resolved PE band are recorded, and a curve is generated by plotting \( (E_i + V_2)/E_i \) versus \( E_{pass}/E_i \) [43]. This focus curve is fitted with a fourth order polynomial trendline of which the coefficients obtained are used as input in the controlling software (LABVIEW) to automatically adjust the voltages applied to the second lens to give the optimum focusing voltage at a specific electron kinetic energy. The third lens element accelerates (or decelerates) the electrons so that they enter the analyser with the appropriate kinetic energy. The voltage of this lens is determined from equation 3.29,

\[
V_3 = E_{pass} - E_i \tag{3.29}
\]

where \( E_{pass} \) is the pass energy and \( E_i \) is the initial kinetic energy of the ejected photoelectrons. When recording PE spectra, the incident photon energy is fixed and the
voltage applied to the third element in the lens system, $V_3$, is swept while the analyser is operated at fixed pass energy.

3.4.2.2 The Vacuum System

The spectrometer needs to be kept at low pressure, $< 10^{-6}$ torr, to ensure that the photoelectrons do not undergo inelastic collisions with the background gas between photoionisation and detection. Low pressure is also necessary to avoid absorption of the photons and contamination of the beamline optics. Figure 3.14 shows the differential pumping system [44, 45] used on the spectrometer.

![Figure 3.14: Cross section of the pumping system of the spectrometer surrounding the photoionisation region.](image)

There are four turbomolecular pumps on the spectrometer, each one backed by a rotary pump. The positions of three turbomolecular pumps are shown in Figure 3.15 and the position of the fourth pump is shown in Figure 3.13 on the rear of the analyser chamber. Figure 3.14 also shows the differential pumping employed on the boxes surrounding the interaction region. The base pressure of the spectrometer is about $10^{-8}$ torr, as measured outside the boxes, on the walls of the ionisation chamber, by an ionisation gauge. However, as long as the spectrometer pressure does not exceed $10^{-6}$ torr, there is no significant change of pressure on the beamline pressure gauges.
3.4.2.3 The Hemispherical Electron Analyser

The electron energy analyser consists of two concentric 180° hemispheres (inner and outer sectors) made of an aluminium alloy. The two hemispheres are held at different voltages, $V_i$ and $V_o$, and have different radii, $R_i$ and $R_o$ respectively. To select the mean pass energy, $E_{pass}$, of the electrons, the voltages applied to the hemispherical electrodes need to be selected. On this spectrometer, $R_i = 8\,\text{cm}$ and $R_o = 12\,\text{cm}$ and the inner separation is 4 cm. In order to obtain the required pass energy, $E_{pass}$, the hemispheres must be at voltages given by [9, 46],

$$V_i = E_{pass} \frac{R_o}{R_i} \quad (3.30)$$

and,

$$V_o = E_{pass} \frac{R_i}{R_o} \quad (3.31)$$

The analyser is usually operated in constant or fixed pass energy mode (usually 5 eV). This means that the voltages applied to the hemispheres are kept constant when recording PE spectra. When PE spectra are recorded, the electron intensity on the detector is recorded as a function of the voltage on the third lens element.

For PES the total width of the entrance and exit slits of the analyser, $\Delta S$, contributes to the base width, $\Delta E_b$, of a recorded photoelectron band, along with the radii of the hemispheres. $\Delta E_b$ is related to the pass energy, $E_{pass}$, via [9, 11, 46]:

$$\Delta E_b = \frac{\Delta S}{R_i + R_o} E_{pass} \quad (3.32)$$

where,

$$\Delta S = \Delta S_{\text{entrance}} + \Delta S_{\text{exit}} \quad (3.33)$$

where $\Delta S_{\text{entrance}}$ and $\Delta S_{\text{exit}}$ are the entrance and exit slit widths respectively. The full width half maximum, $\Delta E_{1/2}$ is then related to the base width, $\Delta E_b$ by [5, 11],
\[ \frac{\Delta E_b}{\Delta E_{1/2}} = 2.3 \]  

(3.34)

In this work, the slits have a separation of 1mm which gives a \( \Delta E_{1/2} \) of 18 meV for pass energy of 5 eV. This resolution can be improved by decreasing the slit size or the pass energy but this is accompanied by a loss of intensity.

3.4.2.4 The Detector and Electronics

The photoelectrons that pass through the lens system and hemispherical analyser are detected by a single channel electron multiplier, also called a channeltron, as described in section 3.1.4. The signal from the channeltron is pre-amplified and amplified before being passed to a General Purpose I/O National Instrument card, connected to a computer. LABVIEW software, specifically written for this spectrometer, records spectra and is used to control the movement of the monochromator attached to the beamline, allowing the photon energy supplied to the ionisation chamber to be swept. The voltages applied to the lenses, hemispheres and outer box are controlled by this software.

3.4.2.5 The Rotation Mechanism

With this spectrometer, angular distribution PE measurements can be performed by measuring PE spectra at two different angles with respect to the direction of the linearly polarised beam [47, 48]. As shown in Figure 3.15, the apparatus was built with a horizontal arm attached to the pump directly underneath the ionisation chamber (P3) and a vertical arm attached to the pump used to evacuate the analyser region (P4), that are both moved with a mechanical screw-drive mechanism. This mechanism allows the whole spectrometer to rotate with respect to the photon beam. In principle angular distribution measurements could be determined by using a magnetic angle changer in the ionisation region [49] or rotating the polarisation of the photon source (in laser experiments) [50]. However, as the plane of polarisation of the linearly polarised synchrotron photon beam cannot be rotated and a magnetic angle changer was not available, the spectrometer was designed to overcome this by rotating the spectrometer around the horizontal plane of polarisation of the radiation.
Figure 3.15 shows the two extreme rotation positions, with angles $\theta = 0^\circ$ and $\theta = 75^\circ$ between the horizontal direction of polarisation of the photon beam and the detector. To measure the angular distribution parameter or asymmetry parameter, $\beta$, of a molecule using this apparatus, spectra are recorded at two different angles ($\theta = 0^\circ$ and $\theta = 54^\circ 44'$ or $54.736^\circ$) with respect to the polarisation of the photon source. When spectra are recorded of a molecule at the angle $\theta = 54^\circ 44'$, better known as the magic angle, the intensities of the measured PE bands are independent of the angular distribution parameter, $\beta$, and directly proportional to the absolute partial photoionisation cross-section at a given photon energy.

![Figure 3.15: The rotation mechanism used on the synchrotron PE spectrometer when measuring angular distribution parameters.](image)

The angular distribution parameter can be calculated from a molecule using the method outlined in section 2.2 of Chapter 2 from equation 2.28 by measuring the PE band intensities at two known angles ($\theta = 0^\circ$ and $\theta = 54^\circ 44'$) [49, 48, 51].

When rotating the spectrometer, it is important to make sure that the detection efficiency of the spectrometer stays the same. The main changes in the detection efficiency arise from small misalignments between the axis of rotation and the direction of the photon beam. To account for this, the PE spectrum of helium (1s)$^{-1}$ is recorded at both angles and the angular distribution parameter, $\beta$, for photoionisation of helium (which is well established as $\beta = 2$ at $\theta = 0$) is evaluated at 28 eV. A comparison
between the measured $\beta$ parameter and the known $\beta$ parameter of helium allows the
determination of a correction factor that can be applied to each spectrum recorded while
carrying out angular distribution measurements (see Chapter 2 for a more detailed
explanation).

### 3.4.3 Threshold Photoelectron Spectra

When recording threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectra, the photon energy is swept
while the lenses are maintained at pre-set voltages, operating the analyser at fixed pass
energy. The typical voltages applied to the elements of the lens system used for
recording TPE spectra are shown in Figure 3.16.

![Figure 3.16: Schematic diagram of the ionisation region and the three element lens system.](image)

These voltages were obtained by simulating 1 meV electron trajectories using a 100 V
extraction voltage applied to the electrode shown in Figure 3.16 using SIMION
software [52]. A potential is applied to the extraction electrode generating a penetrating
electrostatic field. The field produces a saddle point in the potential distribution which
focuses the low energy ($\leq 10$ meV) threshold electrons towards the three element lens
system [39, 53]. The sensitivity is increased ($\sim 5$ meV) as low energy photoelectrons are
collected over a solid angle of $4\pi$, however a loss in angular information is incurred as a
direct consequence of this.

Photoelectrons of higher energies, which have initial trajectories along the axis of the
lens system, are largely unaffected by the extraction voltage. These high energy
photoelectrons create high energy tails on recorded PE bands when detected and are
mostly discriminated against by the analyser being operated at fixed pass energy. The
entrance slits to the analyser will also help to discriminate against the higher energy
electrons from being detected. To reduce the tailing effect seen on PE bands, occurring from low lying Rydberg states above a threshold, and improve the spectral resolution, the lens voltages are optimised by recording PE spectra of the (3p)⁻¹ ionisation of argon. The photon energy was fixed on the \( \text{Ar}^+(2P_{3/2}) \leftrightarrow \text{Ar}(^1S_0)(3p) \) ionic state of argon at 15.7596 eV and the voltages applied to the extraction electrode, each of the three lenses and the hemispheres were individually adjusted while observing the signal intensity. Once the voltages on the lenses gave the most intense signal, an argon spectrum was recorded to observe the relative intensities (6:1) and symmetry of the \( \text{Ar}^+(2P_{3/2}, 2P_{1/2}) \) PE bands. If tailing was observed on a PE band then this optimising process was repeated (usually compromising some intensity for resolution) in order to minimise this effect. After tuning the lenses and hence spheres, which operate at the same voltage as the third lens (typically 3 V), TPE spectra could be recorded over a designated photon energy range, acquiring data over long periods of time. The signal intensity and spectral resolution can change during the time when TPE spectra are being recorded. To account for any change and ensure the repeatability of experimental results, the intensity and resolution were checked and optimised after each run in this way using the argon (3p)⁻¹ signal.

3.5 Summary

In this chapter the three spectrometers used during this project have been described in detail as well as the photon sources and the various inlet systems used for each experiment in this chapter. The sample preparation methods and experimental procedures for each reaction/molecule investigated during this project have been omitted from this chapter. These will be described in detail in their respective chapters. The spectrometers and experimental techniques described in this chapter are used in the experimental studies outlined in Chapters 5-9.
References

Experimental Techniques


[40] http://www.elettra.trieste.it/beamlines/GAPH/


Chapter 4

Theoretical Methods

Photoelectron spectroscopy (PES) provides important information on the electronic structure, vibrational frequencies and the bonding character of molecules and positive ions under investigation (described previously in Chapter 2). Supporting information can also be obtained from molecular orbital (MO) or \textit{ab initio} calculations. MO calculations can be used to assist the interpretation of experimental PE spectra by helping to assign PE bands and to provide additional information such as computed AIEs and the VIEs for bands which may be unresolved or overlapped. Other information concerning the heats of formation and vibrational constants of molecules and ions can also be determined and compared with experimentally derived values. The AIEs and VIEs of two fire suppressant agents, HFC-125 and FM-200, and their thermal decomposition products, have been determined using state-of-the-art \textit{ab initio} calculations. These results are discussed in Chapters 5 and 6 respectively. AIEs, VIEs and neutral and ionic vibrational constants were also determined using \textit{ab initio} calculations for the triatomic molecule SF$_2$ (see Chapter 9). Adiabatic and vertical excitation energies have been calculated along with reaction enthalpies for the atmospherically important molecule monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH$_2$SCH$_3$Cl). These results are discussed in Chapter 10.

The aim of this chapter is to describe the methods which are used in quantum chemistry to perform such electronic structure calculations. This chapter will describe the main levels of theory which can be used in MO calculations, discussing the necessary approximations required in order to complete calculations in a reasonable time and how
effects such as electron reorganisation and electron correlation can be included. An overview on the construction of basis sets and the notation used for basis sets will also be given.

4.1 The Hartree-Fock-Roothaan Method

Hartree-Fock-Roothaan theory, which was first proposed by Hartree [1], then improved by Fock [2] and later extended by Roothaan [3], is a variational method used to provide an approximate solution to the Schrödinger equation [4] for a closed-shell molecule and is the basis of ab initio calculations [5].

4.1.1 The Schrödinger Equation

In quantum mechanics the time-independent Schrödinger equation describes how the wavefunction of a physical system (atom or molecule) changes with coordinates. The wavefunction is related to the energy, $E$, of a system by the time-independent Schrödinger equation,

$$ H\Psi = E\Psi $$

(4.1)

where $H$ is the Hamiltonian operator which is expressed as [6],

$$ H = -\sum_{i}^{\frac{1}{2}} \nabla_i^2 - \sum_{a} \frac{1}{2m_a} \nabla_a^2 - \sum_{i} \sum_{a} Z_a r_{ia} + \sum_{i<j} \frac{1}{r_{ij}} + \sum_{a<b} Z_a Z_b \frac{1}{R_{ab}} $$

(4.2)

where $i$ and $j$ are electrons, $a$ and $b$ are nuclei, $Z$ is the charge on a nucleus, $R$ is the internuclear distance and $\nabla_i^2$ is the Laplacian operator for the $i$th electron where [7, 8],

$$ \nabla_i^2 = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y_i^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial z_i^2} $$

(4.3)

When performing molecular orbital (MO) calculations on atoms or molecules, it is the aim of these calculations to solve the time-independent Schrödinger equation as accurately as possible. However this equation cannot be solved exactly for molecular systems and therefore certain approximations must be introduced in order to obtain approximate solutions [9]. Two main approximations which are used in an MO
4.1.2 The Born-Oppenheimer Approximation

The first approximation to be introduced is the Born-Oppenheimer approximation \([10]\). Due to the large size difference between nuclei and electrons \((10^3-10^5)\), the motion of the nuclei is considered to be negligible (or fixed) when compared to that of the motion of the electrons, i.e. as the nuclei are much heavier than the electrons, the motions of the nuclei take place on a much longer time-scale than the electronic motion \([10]\). The Born-Oppenheimer approximation therefore assumes that nuclear and electronic motions are separable from one another which results in a separation of the total wavefunction into nuclear and electronic parts. This is shown in equation 4.4 below,

\[
\Psi_{\text{total}}(r, R) = \Psi_{\text{nucl}}(R) \times \Psi_{\text{elec}}(r, R) \tag{4.4}
\]

where \(r\) and \(R\) are the electron and nuclear coordinates respectively for a given state of the system (atom or molecule). As the nuclei are deemed fixed on an electronic time-scale, equation 4.1 can be re-written to give,

\[
H_{\text{elec}} \Psi_{\text{elec}} = E_{\text{elec}} \Psi_{\text{elec}} \tag{4.5}
\]

This is referred to as the \textit{electronic} time-independent Schrödinger equation. The electronic Hamiltonian operator, \(H_{\text{elec}}\), can now be expressed as,

\[
H_{\text{elec}} = -\sum_i \frac{1}{2} \nabla_i^2 - \sum_i \sum_a \frac{Z_a}{r_{ia}} + \sum_{i<j} \frac{1}{r_{ij}} = \sum_i h_i + \sum_{i<j} g_{ij} \tag{4.6}
\]

where the first term, \(h_i\), is the one-electron Hamiltonian, which consists of the kinetic energy operator for the electrons and the electron-nuclear attractive potential. The second term in equation 4.6, \(g_{ij}\), is the two-electron operator for the interaction between electrons \(i\) and \(j\). As the nuclei are considered fixed on an electronic time-scale, the kinetic energy term describing the nuclear motion in the Hamiltonian, (the second term
shown in equation 4.2), is neglected and the fifth term in equation 4.2, which describes the nuclear-nuclear repulsion, is considered to be constant (as the nuclei are assumed to be fixed) and is therefore omitted from equation 4.6. Nuclear-nuclear repulsion is, however, included in the total energy calculation. Therefore the total electronic energy, \( E_{\text{elec}} \), can be calculated for a given electronic state of a molecule by obtaining an approximate solution to equation 4.5 at fixed nuclei positions. By determining the total electronic energy of the molecule at many different nuclear coordinates, a potential energy surface can be computed. This potential energy surface can then be used to obtain information concerning the vibrational energies and vibrational wavefunctions of the molecule in a given state.

4.1.3 The One-Electron Approximation

The second approximation which is made in order to obtain approximate solutions of the electronic time-independent Schrödinger equation for a system containing more than one electron is known as the molecular orbital (MO) or one-electron approximation. It assumes that each electron in the system moves in an average field of all the other electrons and nuclei in the system. With this approximation, the total electronic wavefunction can be taken as a product of one-electron wavefunctions, called spin orbitals, where each electron in the system is represented by a one-electron spin orbital, \( \lambda(i) \) [11].

The Pauli Exclusion Principle states that as electrons are fermions, the total electronic wavefunction must be antisymmetric with respect to electron interchange [12]. This condition can be accounted for by writing the total electronic wavefunction in the form of a single Slater determinant, as interchange of any two rows leads to a change of sign of the determinant. The resulting wavefunction is therefore antisymmetric with respect to the exchange of two electrons and can be expressed as [13, 14],

\[
\psi_{\text{elec}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n!}} \begin{vmatrix}
\lambda_1(1) & \lambda_2(1) & \cdots & \lambda_n(1) \\
\lambda_1(2) & \lambda_2(2) & \cdots & \lambda_n(2) \\
\vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\
\lambda_1(n) & \lambda_2(n) & \cdots & \lambda_n(n)
\end{vmatrix} \quad (4.7)
\]

where \( n \) is the total number of electrons in the molecule and \( \frac{1}{\sqrt{n!}} \) is the normalisation coefficient. Using the expression for the electronic Hamiltonian, in equation 4.6, and
using equation 4.7, which shows the electronic wavefunction expressed as a single Slater determinant, the total energy, expressed in terms of spin orbitals, can be written as,

\[ E = \sum_i I'_i + \sum_{i>j} [J'_{ij} - K'_{ij}] \]  

(4.8)

where \( I'_i \) is the one-electron integral, written in terms of the one-electron operator, \( h_i \), which includes the electron kinetic energy operator and the electron-nuclear attraction terms. The two-electron term, \( g_{ij} \), in equation 4.6, gives rise to a Coulomb, \( J_{ij} \), and an exchange, \( K_{ij} \), term in the total energy expression for the system, shown in equation 4.8. The integrals in equation 4.8 are [3],

\[ I'_i = \int \lambda'_i(1) h_i \lambda_i(1) d\tau \]  

(4.9)

\[ J_{ij} = \iint \lambda'_i(1) \lambda'_j(2) \frac{1}{r_{ij}} \lambda_i(1) \lambda_j(2) d\tau \]  

(4.10)

\[ K_{ij} = \iint \lambda'_i(1) \lambda'_j(2) \frac{1}{r_{ij}} \lambda_j(1) \lambda_i(2) d\tau \]  

(4.11)

The Coulomb integral, \( J_{ij} \), represents the interaction of an electron with an average of all other electrons and the exchange integral, \( K_{ij} \), represents the interaction of an electron with electrons of the same spin. A spin orbital, \( \lambda(i) \), also describes the electron spatial distribution of electron \( i \) which is defined by,

\[ \lambda(i) = \begin{cases} \phi(r) \alpha & \\ \phi(r) \beta & \end{cases} \]  

(4.12)

where \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) correspond to spins \( \uparrow \) and \( \downarrow \) respectively, with values of \( s = + \frac{1}{2} \) and \( s = - \frac{1}{2} \). Two electrons can occupy the same space orbital provided that they have different spin. From a given a set of \( K \) spatial orbitals, \( \phi_1, ..., \phi_K \), a set of \( 2K \) restricted spin orbitals \( \lambda_1, ..., \lambda_{2K} \) can be formed. An unrestricted spin orbital in a closed-shell system, on the other hand, will have different spatial functions for \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) spins (see section 4.1.6 regarding unrestricted Hartree-Fock theory) [15]. Spatial molecular orbitals are assumed to be orthonormal,
Theoretical Methods

\[ \int \phi_i^*(r) \phi_j(r) \, dr = \delta_{ij} \quad (4.13) \]

i.e. if \( i = j \) then \( \delta = 1 \) and if \( i \neq j \) then \( \delta = 0 \). For a closed-shell system equation 4.8 can be integrated out over spin, to give [3],

\[ E = 2 \sum_i I_i + \sum_{ij} [2J_{ij} - K_{ij}] \quad (4.14) \]

where the integrals, \( I_i, J_{ij} \) and \( K_{ij} \) are the equivalent of those shown in equations 4.9-11, but expressed in terms of spatial orbitals, \( \phi_i \). In order to determine the true ground state wavefunction, \( \Psi_0 \), for an atom or molecule, the total energy is evaluated using a trial wavefunction, \( \Psi_{\text{trial}} \), which is a good approximation of the true ground state wavefunction, \( \Psi_0 \), and is given by,

\[
E_{\text{trial}} = \frac{\int \Psi_{\text{trial}}^* H \Psi_{\text{trial}} \, d\tau}{\int \Psi_{\text{trial}}^* \Psi_{\text{trial}} \, d\tau} \quad (4.15)
\]

where \( E_{\text{trial}} \) is known as the expectation value of the energy. The variation principle states that for any trial wavefunction used to define a system, the expectation value of the energy, \( E_{\text{trial}} \), can never be less than the true ground state energy, \( E_0 \), i.e. [16],

\[ E_{\text{trial}} \geq E_0 \quad (4.16) \]

If the trial wavefunction is written as a linear combination of the true solutions of the system \( \Psi_j \),

\[ \Psi_{\text{trial}} = \sum_j c_j \Psi_j \quad (4.17) \]

then the difference in the energy, determined using a trial wavefunction and the true ground state energy, is given by substituting equation 4.17 into equation 4.15 to give,

\[
E_{\text{trial}} - E_0 = \frac{\sum_j c_j^* c_j (E_j - E_0)}{\sum_j c_j^* c_j} \quad (4.18)
\]
The best trial wavefunction used to describe a system is one which produces the lowest possible total energy i.e. closest to the true ground state energy of the system [16]. The choice of the initial trial wavefunction is therefore crucial for the success of the method. However, it must be noted that this theorem is valid only for the total energy of the system and not for calculating any other properties. Therefore the best wavefunction used to describe a closed-shell system is found by calculating \( E \) from equation 4.14, for a number of trial spatial orbitals, \( \phi_i \), until a minimum energy is reached.

To derive a set of pseudo-eigenvalue equations, \( E \) is minimised using the Lagrange method of undetermined multipliers, subject to the overlap integral condition,

\[
S_{ij} = \int \phi_i^* \phi_j d\tau = \delta_{ij} \tag{4.19}
\]

So for small variations in \( \phi_i \), equation 4.14 becomes equation 4.20 at an energy minimum,

\[
\delta E = 2 \sum_i \delta l_i + \sum_{ij} \left[ 2\delta f_{ij} - \delta K_{ij} \right] = 0 \tag{4.20}
\]

with the sum of \( i \) and \( j \) running over all occupied space orbitals. Also for small variations in \( \phi_i \),

\[
\delta S_{ij} = 0 \tag{4.21}
\]

In order to minimise the energy subject to the overlap condition in equation 4.19, the Lagrange method of undetermined multipliers is used and equation 4.19 is multiplied by a constant, \(-2\varepsilon_{ij}\), and added to 4.19 to give the new energy expression,

\[
E' = E - 2 \sum_{ij} \varepsilon_{ij} S_{ij} \tag{4.22}
\]

where \( \varepsilon_{ij} \) are constants. Equation 4.22 can be expanded to give,

\[
\delta E' = 2 \sum_i \delta l_i + \sum_{ij} \left[ 2\delta f_{ij} - \delta K_{ij} - 2\varepsilon_{ij} \delta S_{ij} \right] = 0 \tag{4.23}
\]

Use of this equation leads to [17].
Theoretical Methods

\[ F(i)\phi_i = \varepsilon_i \phi_i \]  
\[ (4.24) \]

where \( \phi_i \) are the molecular orbital wavefunctions and \( \varepsilon_i \) are the molecular orbital energies. \( F \) is the one-electron Fock operator and is expressed as,

\[ F(i) = H_N + \sum_j (2J_j - K_j) \]  
\[ (4.25) \]

The second term in equation 4.25 consists of Coulomb and exchange operators acting on electron \( i \). The Fock operator depends on all occupied molecular orbitals, notably the operators \( J_j \) and \( K_j \) which depend on all the occupied orbitals, i.e. the Fock operator is not known until the equations 4.24 and 4.25 are solved, and to solve these, an iterative “self-consistent” procedure is required.

This is achieved by making an initial estimate of the molecular orbitals to obtain a trial Fock operator from equation 4.25, which is then used in equation 4.24 to solve for a new set of MOs. These new MOs are then compared to the initial MOs. The process is then repeated until there is no change between the initial and final MOs, or if there is no difference in the total electronic energy computed for successive iterations to within a preset tolerance. This is known as the Hartree-Fock Self Consistent Field method (Hartree-Fock SCF method).

Roothaan extended the Hartree-Fock method by expressing the MOs as linear combinations of atomic orbitals (LCAO) as,

\[ \phi_i = \sum_q c_{iq} \chi_q \]  
\[ (4.26) \]

where \( \chi_q \) are atomic orbitals, or basis functions, and \( c_{iq} \) is an expansion coefficient. This is known as the Hartree-Fock-Roothaan approximation. Substituting equation 4.26 into 4.24, multiplying by \( \chi_q \) and then integrating gives the LCAO Hartree-Fock-Roothaan equations,

\[ \sum_q c_{iq} (F_{pq} - S_{pq} \varepsilon_i) = 0 \]  
\[ (4.27) \]

The LCAO-SCF method requires computation of two kinds of integrals,
The terms in equation 4.27 are,

\[ F_{pq} = \int \chi_p^* \chi_q \, d\tau = I_{pq} + \sum_j [2(pq|jj) - (pj|jq)] \]  

and,

\[ S_{pq} = \int \chi_p^* \chi_q \, d\tau \]  

where \( S_{pq} \) is the overlap integral between basis functions \( \chi_p \) and \( \chi_q \). The Hartree-Fock-Roothaan secular equations shown in equation 4.27 also have to be solved by minimising the energy in an iterative way. This is done by computing \( S_{pq} \) and making an initial estimate of the expansion coefficients, \( c_{iq} \), in order to compute values for \( F_{pq} \). Once \( F_{pq} \) and \( S_{pq} \) are known then \( \epsilon_i \) can be obtained from,

\[ \left| F_{pq} - S_{pq} \epsilon_i \right| = 0 \]  

Using the \( \epsilon_i \) value obtained from equation 4.32, a new set of expansion coefficients can be determined from equation 4.27. This process is repeated until the total energy reaches a minimum, within a pre-determined tolerance. If a larger number of basis functions are used, a better description of the one electron MOs is obtained. The Hartree-Fock limit is reached when increasing number of basis functions gives rise to no change in the total converged SCF energy.

However performing calculations at the Hartree-Fock limit is usually not possible as it takes a considerable amount of computer time. In practice, a smaller number of basis functions are chosen order to make the calculation possible.
4.1.4 Koopmans’ Theorem

As ionisation energies are one of the main quantities obtained from experimental PE spectra, it is important to be able to calculate such energies in order to compare calculated values with those obtained experimentally. This will assist in PE band assignment. The ionisation energy for a closed shell molecule can be calculated using Koopmans’ theorem from a Hartree-Fock calculation on the neutral molecule. Koopmans’ theorem states that in a closed-shell molecule, the vertical ionisation energy, $IE_j$, (referred to as VIE) of an emitted electron is equal in magnitude to the negative of the orbital energy, $-\epsilon_j$, from which the electron originated, where the orbital energy is obtained from an $ab initio$ calculation performed at the Hartree-Fock limit. This relationship is shown in equation 4.33 [18],

$$ IE_j = -\epsilon_j $$ (4.33)

However, Koopmans’ theorem is only an approximation, as it does not take into consideration the effects of electron reorganisation (the orbital relaxation when passing from the neutral to the ion) and the electron correlation energy change on ionisation (the difference in correlation energy between the molecule and the ion which is discussed in section 4.1.5 of this chapter). As a result, vertical ionisation energies obtained are often too high. To improve the estimation of vertical ionisation energies, the reorganisation energy, $R$, and the electron correlation energy change, $C$, need to be included in equation 4.33. Koopmans’ vertical ionisation energies are related to the experimental vertical ionisation energies by,

$$ IE_{vertical} = IE_{Koopmans} - R + C $$ (4.34)

Koopmans’ theorem usually gives a good approximation of experimental vertical ionisation energies as reorganisation energies and electron correlation energy corrections are often of the same magnitude and tend to cancel each other. However, this is not guaranteed as the computed vertical ionisation energies obtained from Koopmans’ theorem are often too high, as mentioned, which implies that $R \geq C$. It is possible to allow for the reorganisation effect by performing separate Hartree-Fock calculations on the neutral molecule and the ionic species. The vertical ionisation energy is then obtained from the difference between the total energy of the neutral
molecule and that of the ion. This is called the ΔSCF method [19]. ΔSCF values are often too low as electron correlation effects are neglected in the calculations.

4.1.5 Electron Correlation

In Hartree-Fock theory, electrons are assumed to be moving in an average potential of all the other electrons which is not a true representation of the instantaneous electron-electron interactions which occur in molecules. This instantaneous electron-electron interaction is not accounted for in the Hartree-Fock method, as it is treated in an average way, and this gives rise to an electron correlation error. The electron correlation energy of a molecule in a given state, $E_{\text{corr}}$, is defined as the difference between the Hartree-Fock energy, $E_{\text{HF}}$, obtained using a very large basis set, i.e. at the Hartree-Fock limit, and the exact non-relativistic energy, $E_{\text{Exact}}$, i.e.,

$$E_{\text{corr}} = E_{\text{Exact}} - E_{\text{HF}}$$  \hspace{1cm} (4.35)

Correlation effects can be separated out into dynamical and non dynamical effects [20]. Dynamical electron correlation is largely structure dependent and arises from an overestimation of short range electron interaction in Hartree-Fock wavefunctions. However, non-dynamical electron correlation energy effects occur when the state of a molecule investigated is close in energy to another state and interaction occurs, i.e. non-dynamical electron correlation arises from the degeneracy or near-degeneracy of configurations involving valence orbitals [21].

Several methods, known as post-Hartree-Fock methods, have been developed to include these correlation effects. They include configuration interaction (CI) which is one of the most important methods used to account for the missing electron correlation, and Møller-Plesset perturbation theory (MP-PT) which improves on the Hartree-Fock method by including the effects of electron correlation using Rayleigh–Schrödinger perturbation theory (RS-PT), usually to second (MP2), third (MP3) or fourth (MP4) order [22].

In this work, these methods have been used to account for electron correlation effects in \textit{ab initio} calculations and the results are presented in Chapters 5, 6 and 10.
4.1.6 Restricted and Unrestricted Hartree-Fock Methods

It must be noted, the Hartree-Fock LCAO-SCF method described above, is only applicable when performing calculations on closed-shell molecules and is referred to as a spin restricted calculation as it uses the same spatial function for both \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) electrons when paired in the same molecular orbital. This is known as the restricted Hartree-Fock method (RHF). When the restricted Hartree-Fock method is applied to an open-shell system, \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) electrons in filled molecular orbitals share the same space orbitals, but \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) electrons which are unpaired have separate space orbitals. Therefore, occupied and unoccupied molecular orbitals require different sets of energy expressions.

Another method which can be used for calculations on open-shell systems is known as the unrestricted Hartree-Fock (UHF) method. In the unrestricted Hartree-Fock method different spatial orbitals are used for \( \alpha \) and \( \beta \) electrons. As a consequence, the two sets of electrons do not experience the same Coulomb and exchange potentials and therefore they will have different associated energies and spatial distributions as there is no restriction on the spatial orbitals [23]. UHF calculations have the advantage of providing lower total energies than RHF calculations. However, one disadvantage of UHF calculations is that a UHF wavefunction with an unpaired electron may not yield a pure doublet state and may be “contaminated” with quartet states. The amount of contamination is evaluated by comparing the expectation value of the \( S^2 \) operator, which is checked at the end of the calculation, with the expected value for the pure spin state.

Time and cost are important aspects when running calculations and these are dependent on two factors, the level of theory used, e.g. Hartree-Fock or Møller-Plesset, in the calculation (more detail on different levels of theory used in MO calculations is discussed in section 4.3.1-3) and the size of the basis set, i.e. the number of basis functions used when performing a calculation and this is described in the next section.

4.2 Basis Sets

As already described, molecular orbitals can be expressed as linear combinations of basis functions. The set of basis functions used in a calculation is termed the basis set. The larger the basis set, the lower the total energy, and the accuracy of the calculation increases. However the computational time required in order to perform a Hartree-Fock
calculation scales by \( n^4 \) (where \( n \) is the number of basis functions used). Therefore the choice of basis set used for a molecular orbital calculation must take into account the time of the calculation and hence the overall cost to run the calculation.

Two main types of basis functions are commonly used to describe atomic orbitals; Slater Type Orbitals (STOs) and Gaussian Type Orbitals (GTOs). Slater type orbitals have the functional form [13, 14],

\[
\chi(r, \theta, \varphi) = N Y_{l,m}(\theta, \varphi) r^{n-1} e^{-\zeta r}
\]  

(4.36)

where \( N \) is a normalisation constant, \( n, l \) and \( m \) are the principal, angular momentum and magnetic quantum numbers respectively, \( Y_{l,m}(\theta, \varphi) \) is a spherical harmonic function and \( \zeta \) is an orbital exponent. STOs reproduce atomic electronic distributions reasonably well. However two-electron integrals expressed in terms of STOs cannot be evaluated analytically and can only be evaluated numerically, with considerable computational effort. However, two-electron integrals expressed in GTOs can be evaluated analytically. Gaussian type orbitals have the form [24, 25],

\[
\chi(x, y, z) = N x^a y^b z^c e^{-\zeta r^2}
\]  

(4.37)

where \( a, b \) and \( c \) are integers whose sum is equal to the angular momentum quantum number \( l \). It is seen from equation 4.37 that there is no dependence on the principal quantum number, \( n \). GTOs, in contrast to STOs, do not satisfactorily reproduce the proper electronic distribution at short or long distances from the nuclei. This can be corrected by using more GTOs to represent an AO.

Basis sets which use the same number of GTOs (or STOs) as there are core and valence AOs to represent a molecule are called minimal basis sets. When two basis functions are used to describe each AO, the basis set is called a double zeta basis set (DZ) and when three basis functions are used the basis set is termed a triple-zeta basis set (TZ), and so on.

To account for anisotropic charge distribution effects which occur on bonding, as the charge distribution of an atom in a molecule differs from that of an isolated atom, polarisation functions are used. The effect of polarisation can be included in a basis set by incorporating a \( p \)-type basis function for a \( 1s \) orbital and a \( d \)-type basis function for
Theoretical Methods

$p$-orbitals. Certain notation is used when constructing a basis set. A single (*) indicates the use of a $d$-type polarisation function on the heavy, non-hydrogen, atoms, whereas a second (*) indicates the use of a $p$-type polarisation function for hydrogen atoms [26]. In order to provide a better description at longer distances from the nuclei, a diffuse function can be added to the basis set. Diffuse functions are indicated by a (+). Similar to polarisation functions a single (+) sign indicates the use of a diffuse function only on each heavy, non-hydrogen, atom in the molecule and a basis set which includes (++) indicates that the diffuse functions are included for both the heavier atoms and the hydrogen atoms.

A basis set must first correctly describe the core and valence electronic distributions of a molecule. A common type of basis set used is called a *split-valence K-LM G* basis set, which uses a minimal set of $K$ basis functions to describe the core electrons and a basis set of higher quality ($L$ and $M$ functions) to describe the valence electrons [27, 28]. This method provides a good compromise between time (cost) and accuracy, and is generally used for geometry optimisation [29-31]. Another type of basis set used has the notation *aug-cc-pVQZ*. These types of basis sets are designed for calculations which include electron correlation and have several built-in $p$ and $d$-type polarisation functions. Expanding the size of this type of basis set allows the results obtained to be extrapolated to the complete basis set (CBS) limit.

*Ab initio* calculations have been performed in this work to determine the AIE and VIE of the first PE bands and the VIEs of all subsequent PE bands of the fire suppressants HFC-125 and FM-200 using the *split-valence K-LM G* and *aug-cc-pVQZ* type basis sets at various levels of theory. The values obtained compare well with those determined experimentally. VIEs are determined, using the $\Delta$SCF method, by performing separate SCF energy calculations for the neutral molecule and the ion (using the equilibrium geometry from the neutral molecule for the ion) and taking the difference in the total energies obtained. The AIEs are determined using the same SCF procedure using the respective equilibrium geometries for the neutral molecule and the ion. The results of the calculations performed for HFC-125 and FM-200 are reported in Chapters 5 and 6 respectively. Various theoretical methods have been used, along with different types and sizes of basis sets, to compute ionisation energies which involve a geometry optimisation and a single point calculation at a higher level. An example, taken from
Table 5.2 of Chapter 5 used to compute AIEs and VIEs, which describes the parameters and level of calculations, highlighting the use of both the split-valence $K$-$LM G$ and $aug$-$cc$-$pVQZ$ type basis sets, is shown below.

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
\text{Single Point Calculation} & \text{Geometry Optimisation} \\
RCCSD(T)/aug - cc - pVQZ/\text{MP2/6 - 31} + +G^{**} & \\
1 & 2 & 3 & 4
\end{array}
\]  

(4.38)

This notation indicates that first a geometry optimisation is performed at the MP2 level using a split-valence type basis set (sections 3 and 4) and then a single point calculation is performed at a higher level, RCCSD(T), using an aug-cc-pVQZ type basis set (sections 1 and 2) using the MP2 optimised geometry.

Section 1 represents the method, i.e. the level of theory, used in the single point calculation. In this case RCCSD(T) stands for Restricted Coupled Cluster theory with Single and Double excitations plus a perturbative Triple excitation (the coupled cluster method is explained in section 4.3.2). Section 2 represents the basis set used at the RCCSD(T) level of theory. The basis set used is the aug-cc-pVQZ type basis set which stands for Augmented (meaning there are diffuse functions)-Correlation Consistent-Polarised Valence Quadruple Zeta. This type of basis set was introduced by Dunning et al. for calculations which included calculation of electron correlation [32]. Section 3 represents the level of theory used (MP2 is Møller-Plesset perturbation theory at second order) and is discussed in section 4.3.3. Section 4 represents a split-valence type basis set used at the Møller-Plesset level of theory and is written in Pople notation. Pople pioneered the development of \textit{ab initio} quantum chemistry calculations and played a key role in the development of the Gaussian suite of programs (the Gaussian03/09 suite of programs was used during this work) [33]. The split-valence type basis set shown can be described as follows; $6$-$31$++$G^{**}$ indicates that six Gaussian functions are used to describe each core atomic orbital basis function. $6$-$31+$++$G^{**}$ indicates that three Gaussians and one Gaussian are used for the valence orbitals to describe each valence atomic orbital basis function [34]. In this basis set, it is seen that two (++) and two (**) are used. This shows that polarisation and diffuse functions are included in the calculation for all hydrogen and non-hydrogen atoms. How a calculation is actually
performed, regardless of the size and type of the basis set used, depends on the theoretical method chosen to perform the calculation.

4.3 Levels of Theory

4.3.1 Configuration Interaction (CI)

In the configuration interaction (CI) method a wavefunction is expanded as a linear combination of several Slater determinants, unlike the Hartree-Fock method which uses a single Slater determinant to represent a wavefunction [35]. When a CI calculation is performed on a closed-shell molecule the initial calculation solves the Hartree-Fock equations using a given basis set for a single determinantal wavefunction. This is known as the reference determinant, \( \Psi_{\text{ref}} \). The MOs of interest within the system can be separated out into occupied and virtual (or empty orbitals) MOs. Excitation of one or more electrons from occupied orbitals to virtual orbitals leads to the excited configurations, \( \Psi_1, \Psi_2 \ldots \) etc where \( \Psi_n \) is a configuration state function. A trial wavefunction can then be expressed as the sum of all substituted determinants as,

\[
\Psi_{\text{trial}} = c_0 \Psi_{\text{ref}} + c_1 \Psi_1 + c_2 \Psi_2 + \ldots \tag{4.39}
\]

where \( \Psi_{\text{ref}} \) is the single determinantal (reference) wavefunction obtained using Hartree-Fock theory and \( \Psi_n \) (where \( n \) is an integer) are determinants that represent configurations obtained by excitation from occupied spin orbitals in the reference determinant to unoccupied (virtual) spin orbitals. The coefficients, \( c_n \), reflect the weight of each determinant and are determined from the requirement to minimise the total energy of the electronic state.

Only configuration functions of the same symmetry as the state of interest are included in equation 4.39. Applying the variational method to the trial wavefunction yields a set of secular equations,

\[
\sum_s c_{st} (H_{st} - E_i \delta_{st}) = 0 \tag{4.40}
\]

where \( E_i \) is the energy, \( \delta_{st} \) is the Kronecker delta and \( H_{st} \) is a configurational integral,
\[ H_{st} = \int \ldots \int \Psi_s H \Psi_t d\tau_1 d\tau_2 \ldots d\tau_n \] (4.41)

where \( n \) is the number of electrons. For most systems, the Hartree-Fock determinant is the main term in the linear combination, i.e. \( c_0 \) is usually close to 1.

The exact solution of the non-relativistic Schrödinger equation could be obtained if the full CI method was used with a complete basis set (CBS) [36]. However, it is not practical to consider all excited configurations as the total number of permutations of electrons and orbitals can become extremely large. To reduce the number of determinants in the CI expansion only a few levels of excitation are considered.

The best way to restrict the size of the CI expansion is only to consider configuration functions which provide the most significant contributions to the wavefunction of the state of interest [37]. For example, in the configuration interaction singles (CIS) method, considering only single excitations, or configuration interaction doubles (CID) method, which considers only double excitations, only wavefunctions that differ from the Hartree-Fock wavefunction by a single or double excitations are considered. Even at the CISD (which involves single and double excitations) level, the number of excited configurations generated can still be very large. Quadruple excitations will also contribute to the total energy and need to be taken into account. To avoid performing a calculation that includes single, double, triple and quadruple excitations (CISDTQ), a formula known as the Davidson correction can be used to estimate the contribution of quadruple excited determinants, \( \Delta E_Q \), to the correlation energy from [38],

\[ \Delta E_Q = (1 - c_0^2)(E_{CISD} - E_{SCF}) \] (4.42)

where \( E_{CISD} \) is the ground state energy in a CISD calculation, \( E_{SCF} \) is the ground state energy associated with \( \Psi_{\text{ref}} \) obtained in a Hartree-Fock-SCF calculation and \( c_0 \) is the coefficient of the reference determinant in a CISD calculation. An extension of the CI method is called the coupled cluster method [39].

### 4.3.2 Coupled Cluster (CC) Method

In the Coupled Cluster (CC) method, the full CI wavefunction is given in the exponential form,
\[ \Psi_{cc} = e^T \Psi_0 \]  \hfill (4.43)

where \( T \) is the cluster operator defined as,

\[ T = T_1 + T_2 + T_3 + \ldots + T_n \]  \hfill (4.44)

where \( n \) is the total number of electrons and the \( T_i \) operators generate all \( i \)th excited Slater determinants,

\[ T_i = \sum_{\text{occ}} \sum_{\text{vir}} t_{i}^{a} \Psi_{i}^{a} \]  \hfill (4.45)

where \( t \) are amplitudes, \( i \) are the occupied orbitals and \( a \) are the unoccupied (virtual) orbitals. If all levels of excitations are included, a wavefunction computed at the CC level would be exact. However, this is possible only with small systems. In practice, the cluster operator must be truncated at some excitation level. For example, CCSD denotes a CC method with only single and double excitations. It uses \( T = T_1 + T_2 \). CCSD involves computational effort which is proportional to \( n^6 \) while the next level of computation, which involves triple excitations (CCSDT), is much more costly, scaling by \( n^8 \) \[40, 41\]. Alternatively, the triple excitation contributions can be evaluated by means of another method, perturbation theory, and added to the CCSD amplitudes. This is less computationally demanding. This hybrid method is referred to as CCSD(T) and is commonly used as it is a very robust method.

The CI method has the disadvantage in that it is not size consistent, i.e. the wavefunction and energy calculated for the atoms in a molecule at infinite separation are not identical to those calculated for the isolated atoms, though the method does have the advantage of being variational (unlike the CC method which is not variational). An alternative to CI is Møller-Plesset Perturbation Theory. These calculations are size consistent. However like CC methods they are also not variational.

### 4.3.3 Møller-Plesset Perturbation Theory

Perturbation methods are size consistent as the energy from two equal fragments at infinite distance is equal to twice the energy of the single fragment, and the equations for two or more fragments are separable \[21\]. Møller-Plesset perturbation theory is one
of the most commonly used MO \textit{ab initio} methods. It starts by assuming the sum of all the one-electron Fock operators for each electron within a molecular system as the unperturbed Hamiltonian (zero-order), \( H_0 \).

\[ H_0 = \sum_i F_i \quad (4.46) \]

When a perturbation, \( H_1 \), is then applied, the electronic Hamiltonian, \( H \), can be expressed as,

\[ H = \sum_i F_i + H_1 \quad (4.47) \]

From perturbation theory the exact wavefunction can be formulated as,

\[ \Psi_\lambda = \Psi_0 + \lambda_1 \Psi_1 + \lambda_2 \Psi_2 + \lambda_3 \Psi_3 \ldots \quad (4.48) \]

In which \( \Psi_i \) is the \( i \)th order contribution to the ground state Hartree-Fock wavefunction, \( \Psi_0 \). In the same way the total energy can be expanded to give,

\[ E_\lambda = E_0 + \lambda_1 E_1 + \lambda_2 E_2 + \lambda_3 E_3 \ldots \quad (4.49) \]

The parameter, \( \lambda \), is then set to one and the series is truncated at the chosen order, \( n \). The method is then denoted MP\( n \). It can be shown that the Hartree-Fock energy, \( E_{HF} \), for the ground state wavefunction, \( \Psi_0 \), is,

\[ E_{HF} = \iint \Psi_0 (H_0 + H_1) \Psi_0 d\tau_1 d\tau_2 \quad (4.50) \]

The energy values for a given perturbation level can then be expressed as,

\[ E_0 = \iint \Psi_0 H_0 \Psi_0 d\tau_1 d\tau_2 \quad (4.51) \]

\[ E_1 = \iint \Psi_0 H_1 \Psi_0 d\tau_1 d\tau_2 \quad (4.52) \]

\[ E_2 = \iint \Psi_0 H_2 \Psi_1 d\tau_1 d\tau_2 \quad (4.53) \]
It can be seen from equations 4.50-4.52 that the Hartree-Fock energy is the sum of $E_0 + E_1$. The first correction to the ground state energy is given by a second-order perturbation energy as,

$$E_2 = \sum_{j \neq 0} \frac{\iint \Psi_j H_j \Psi_0 d\tau_1 d\tau_2 \iint \Psi_0 H_j \Psi_j d\tau_1 d\tau_2}{E_j - E_0}$$  \hspace{1cm} (4.55)$$

Only doubly excited determinants, $\Psi_i$, have non-zero $H_0$ matrix elements with $\Psi_0$ and so only double excitations contribute to $E_2$. When this second-order correction is incorporated, the method is called MP2. MP2 is one of the most successful methods in quantum chemistry as it accounts for 50-80% of electron correlation using a relatively small amount of computational time. Also no major assumptions need to be made other than determining the initial reference wavefunction.

The energy expression can be corrected for third and fourth-order perturbations i.e. yielding a perturbative series of MP1, MP2, MP3, MP4 etc, where MP1 has been shown to be equivalent to the Hartree-Fock energy from equation 4.50. In the Møller-Plesset method the first and second derivatives of the energy can be determined analytically which has the advantage for locating stationary points and calculating harmonic vibrational frequencies efficiently. This was the method used in this work to determine the optimised geometries and vibrational frequencies of the molecules studied (see Chapters 5 and 6).

### 4.4 Summary

This chapter has described the theoretical methods which have been used to perform ab initio calculations in support of the experimental work of this project and how these calculations can be used to determine various relevant quantities for a molecule, e.g. the determination of AIEs and VIEs for both open and closed-shell molecules. These methods have been used by Dr E. P. F. Lee of the Southampton PES group to determine the AIEs, VIEs and reaction enthalpies associated with the fire suppressant agents HFC-125 and FM-200 and the atmospherically important molecule monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl). These results are discussed in Chapters 5, 6 and 10 respectively.
References

Chapter 5

A Study of Pentafluoroethane and its Thermal Decomposition using PES and \textit{ab initio} Molecular Orbital Calculations

New fire extinguishants are currently being sought with low ozone depletion potentials (ODPs) and low global warming potentials (GWPs). Halogenated hydrocarbons (halons) have been found to exhibit good fire suppression properties. However, bromine and chlorine containing hydrocarbons and fluorocarbons (e.g. CH$_3$Cl, CF$_3$Br, CF$_2$Cl$_2$ and CF$_2$Br$_2$), whilst exhibiting good fire suppression properties, give rise to environmental problems in that they have significant ODP and GWP values [1]. As a result, hydrofluorocarbons (HFCs) are being considered as alternative fire extinguishants. Also, HFCs are replacing chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs) in industrial applications, such as refrigeration and foam blowing because of their less harmful effects on stratospheric ozone [2]. The use of HFCs in these areas has prompted a number of studies of their chemical and physical properties related to these applications [3-9].

Pentafluoroethane (CF$_3$CHF$_2$), also referred to as HFC-125 or R-125, is one of the simplest HFCs. It has been studied in some detail in the gas-phase by microwave, infrared, Raman and far-infrared spectroscopy [10-12]. However, its thermal decomposition had not been investigated experimentally. To establish how CF$_3$CHF$_2$ suppresses and extinguishes flames, its thermal decomposition was studied in a flow system using PES. Although CF$_3$CHF$_2$ has not been studied previously using PES, the
threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum and ion yield curves of the observed ionic fragments obtained after photoionisation have been recorded in the photon energy range 12.0-25.0 eV using synchrotron radiation as the photon source [13]. Also, the fragmentation of the valence electronic states of CF₃CHF₂⁺ has been studied using the threshold photoelectron-photoion coincidence (TPEPICO) technique [13]. In the TPE spectrum the first band was broad and vibrationally unresolved which is consistent with a significant geometry change on ionisation. The band onset was measured as (12.70 ± 0.05) eV and the band maximum (the VIE) was measured as (13.76 ± 0.05) eV [13]. A vacuum ultraviolet (v.u.v) photoionisation study [14], determined the experimental first adiabatic ionisation energy (AIE) as (12.25 ± 0.10) eV, which is consistent with AIE values of 12.25 and 12.26 eV computed using the G2 and G3 methods [13, 14]. The discrepancy of ~0.5 eV between the experimental onset of (12.70 ± 0.05) eV from the TPE study and the computed AIEs at the G2 and G3 levels was attributed in the TPEPICO study [13] to the inability of the TPE method to obtain a measurable signal at the ionisation threshold for a molecule that has small Franck-Condon factors for direct ionisation near threshold. It is, however, notable in the photoionisation work of reference [14], that the parent ion (CF₃CHF₂⁺) was not observed at any of the photon energies used (in the region 12.0-22.5 eV) and the value for the first AIE, quoted as (12.25 ± 0.10) eV, appears to have been derived from analysis of v.u.v absorption spectra (although no details of this are given).

In this work, PE spectra of CF₃CHF₂ and its pyrolysis products were recorded as a function of temperature in a flow system (described in section 3.3 of Chapter 3). In addition, state-of-the-art ab initio calculations have been performed on CF₃CHF₂ and CF₃CHF₂⁺, and the fragments obtained from CF₃CHF₂ and CF₃CHF₂⁺. These were carried out to obtain reliable AIE and VIE values in order to assist interpretation of the experimental PE spectra and also to obtain a reliable enthalpy of formation (ΔH₂98k⁰) for CF₃CHF₂ and its cation in their ground electronic states. All calculations were performed by Dr E. P. F. Lee of the Southampton PES group and are included in this chapter for completeness.
5.1 Experimental

The PE spectrum of CF₃CHF₂ was recorded using the big spectrometer (described in section 3.1 of Chapter 3) with a high temperature RF heating system coupled to the ionisation region (as described in section 3.3 of Chapter 3) [15, 16]. Typical operating resolution of the spectrometer throughout this work was 20-25 meV, as measured for the (3p)¹ ionisation of argon. PE spectra of CF₃CHF₂ (Ineos Fluor, 99.7%) and CF₃H (Aldrich, 98%), a product observed during pyrolysis, were recorded and calibrated by admitting the sample into the spectrometer at the same time as argon and methyl iodide (CH₃I). Argon and methyl iodide are used as calibrants when recording PE spectra as they have sharp, intense He(I) PE bands of well known ionisation energies covering a spectral range of 6 eV [17-20]. All recorded PE spectra presented in this thesis have been calibrated using this method unless described otherwise.

Spectra were recorded at different furnace temperatures, obtained by increasing the heater voltage of the induction heating system. The internal furnace temperature was measured using a K-type (Ni-Cr/Ni-Al) thermocouple in contact with the internal wall of the susceptor. This procedure could be used to measure internal furnace wall temperatures up to 1300 °C. Above 1300 °C, in the range 1300-2000 °C, an optical pyrometer was used to determine the external furnace wall temperature, by viewing the outside of the furnace through a window on the ionisation chamber (shown as K in Figure 3.9 in section 3.3 of Chapter 3). Measured temperatures values, using the thermocouple and pyrometer, are given in Table 5.1 with extrapolated values above 1300 °C indicated with a *.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Anode Voltage (mV)</th>
<th>Thermo Voltage (mV)</th>
<th>Thermocouple Temp (°C)</th>
<th>Pyrometer Temp (°C)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>19.0</td>
<td>750</td>
<td>700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>21.7</td>
<td>835</td>
<td>760</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>24.9</td>
<td>958</td>
<td>870</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>31.3</td>
<td>1121</td>
<td>990</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>34.6</td>
<td>1197</td>
<td>1060</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>38.8</td>
<td>1304</td>
<td>1130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>1424*</td>
<td>1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>1481*</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>1550*</td>
<td>1360</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Table 5.1: Conversion of anode voltages from the induction heating system to temperatures made using thermo-voltage values calibrated for a K-type (Ni-Cr/Ni-Al) thermocouple.*

By separately plotting the measured temperatures from both the thermocouple and optical pyrometer as a function of the applied heater voltage, the thermocouple
temperatures could be extrapolated to higher values (i.e. > 1300 °C) and the optical pyrometer values could be extrapolated to lower values (i.e. < 700 °C). The experimental temperatures quoted in this work were the thermocouple measurements up to 1300 °C and the extrapolated thermocouple values up to 2000 °C (i.e. the internal wall temperatures of the furnace, which were compared with the temperatures measured with the pyrometer above 1300°C to check that the values were reasonable; at each heater voltage the pyrometer temperature (outer wall temperature) was always lower than the thermocouple temperature (inner wall temperature) over the temperature range that both measurements could be made, approximately 750-1300 °C).

5.2 Computational Details

Geometry optimisation and harmonic frequency calculations were carried out for CF$_3$CHF$_2$ and CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$ using the Gaussian03 suite of programs [21], employing the density functional theory (DFT) method with the B3LYP functional and the MP2 method. Single energy calculations for improved relative electronic energies were performed at the RCCSD(T) level using the MOLPRO programs [22]. Various standard basis sets were used, and extrapolation of the computed first adiabatic and vertical ionisation energies to the complete basis set (CBS) limit was carried out using the 1/X$^3$ formula [22]. In addition, higher vertical ionisation energies have been computed at the Hartree-Fock, negatives of computed orbital energies of the neutral molecule; Koopmans’ Theorem values, (see section 4.1.4 of Chapter 4) time-dependent density functional theory (computed TD-DFT excitation energies of the cation using the B3LYP functional plus the first VIE) and equations-of-motion coupled-cluster single and double excitations (IP-EOM-CCSD employing the ACES2 programs [23]) levels, using different standard basis sets. Zero-point energy (ZPE) corrections were made to computed AIE values (to give AIE$_0$ values) employing unscaled computed MP2 harmonic vibrational frequencies. The enthalpy of formation ($\Delta H_{f,298K}$) of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ was computed by considering three different reactions:

\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 + \text{CH}_4 + \text{CHF}_3 \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 + 2\text{CF}_4
\] (5.1)

\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 + 5\text{H}_2 \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 + 5\text{HF}
\] (5.2)

\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 + 6\text{H}_2 \rightarrow 2\text{CH}_4 + 5\text{HF}
\] (5.3)
Reaction (5.1) is isodesmic, and hence it should be the least demanding in terms of theory and yield the most reliable results. However, reactions (5.2) and (5.3) were also considered in order to give some estimates of the computational uncertainties associated with the level of calculation employed. The enthalpy changes of these reactions were computed at the RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** and RCCSD(T)/cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G** levels (described in section 4.2 of Chapter 4; see also equation 4.38 of Chapter 4 for a description of the notation used when describing basis sets) and extrapolated to the CBS limit using the 1/X^3 formula. \( \Delta H_{f,298K}^\Theta (CF_3CHF_2) \) was then evaluated using best \( \Delta H_{f,298K}^\Theta \) values (i.e. the most reliable values and/or the values with the smallest uncertainties) available for other species involved in each of these reactions. The \( \Delta H_{f,298K}^\Theta \) values of H_2, HF, CH_4, CHF_3, CF_4 and C_2H_6 used are 0.0, - (65.32 \pm 0.17) [24], - (17.56 \pm 0.10) [25], - (166.18 \pm 0.05) [26], - (223.0 \pm 0.3) [25]) and (-20.03 \pm 0.05) [26] kcal.mol\(^{-1}\), respectively. \( \Delta H_{f,298K}^\Theta (CF_3CHF) \) was also computed by considering the following reaction,

\[
CF_3CHF + CH_4 + CHF_3 \rightarrow C_2H_6 + CF_4 + CF_3
\]

To evaluate \( \Delta H_{f,298K}^\Theta (CF_3CHF) \) from this reaction, \( \Delta H_{f,298K}^\Theta \) value of (-111.7 \pm 0.5) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) [26] was used for CF_3 as well as the appropriate values listed above.

5.3 Results and Discussion

5.3.1 The Photoelectron Spectrum of CF_3CHF_2

The PE spectrum of CF_3CHF_2, shown in Figure 5.1, shows six PE bands. The VIEs of these bands, as well as the measured onset of the first band, the AIE, were averaged over ten expanded spectra. The VIEs measured for each band observed in the PE spectrum are marked in Figure 5.1 as A - F.

Comparison between the PE and the TPE spectra (red) [13], seen in Figure 5.2, shows that the band onset and VIE for the first band measured by the two techniques are essentially the same (PE values; onset (12.71 \pm 0.05) eV, VIE (13.76 \pm 0.02) eV; TPE values (12.70 \pm 0.05) eV; VIE (13.76 \pm 0.05) eV). However, major differences are observed at higher ionisation energies. The TPE spectrum appears less well resolved than the PE spectrum particularly above 15.0 eV.
Figure 5.1: Photoelectron spectrum of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ recorded with HeI (21.22 eV) radiation. The gas sample was admitted from a lecture bottle at room temperature. The vertical lines on this diagram are vertical ionisation energies computed with EOM-CCSD/cc-pVTZ calculations.

In the PE spectrum, the first band is quite well separated from the second band but in the TPE spectrum the high energy side of the first band is more intense and has a larger band overlap with the second band. Also, in the PE spectrum the second band maximum is measured as (15.67 ± 0.02) eV whereas in the TPE spectrum it is measured as (16.37 ± 0.05) eV. It appears that the second band maximum in the TPE spectrum, at (16.37 ± 0.05) eV, correlates best with the third band in the PE spectrum at (16.29 ± 0.05) eV, and the third band in the TPE spectrum, at (17.53 ± 0.05) eV, correlates best with the fifth band in the PE spectrum at (17.35 ± 0.04) eV. The band envelopes seen in the PE spectra are determined by the Franck-Condon factors for direct ionisation between the neutral ground state and the relevant cationic states. In comparison, the TPE band envelopes have contributions both from direct ionisation, as in the PE spectra, and indirect ionisation (autoionisation) from highly excited neutral states which lie above an ionisation threshold.
These excited states are Rydberg states which are members of a series which converge to higher ionisation thresholds, (briefly described in section 2.1 of Chapter 2). The different band envelopes observed in the two types of spectra, notably on the high ionisation energy side of the first band and for bands above 15.0 eV in the TPE spectrum, the TPE spectrum appears to be less well resolved than the PE spectrum as can be seen in Figure 5.2. Relative band intensities will also be different between TPE spectra, which will depend on photoionisation cross-sections close to threshold, and the PE spectra, which depend on photoionisation cross-sections typically 4-5 eV above threshold.

5.3.2 Results of Electronic Structure Calculations

Geometry optimisation calculations carried out at the B3LYP/6-31++G**, MP2/6-31++G** and MP2/6-311++G(2d,2p) levels gave C\textsubscript{S} structures for both the $\tilde{X}\text{I}A'$ state of the neutral CF\textsubscript{3}CHF\textsubscript{2} molecule and the $\tilde{X}\text{A}'$ state for the cation which are in agreement with results of previous studies [13]. The computed geometry change upon ionisation is mainly in the C-C bond length, which increases from 1.5415, 1.5291 and...
1.5250 Å in the neutral to 2.1085, 2.0103 and 2.0167 Å in the cation at the three levels of calculation, respectively. These bond lengths compare favourably with values obtained for the neutral and cation of 1.5187 and 1.9756 Å at the MP2(full)/6-31G(d) level in reference [13]. The first adiabatic (AIE) and vertical (VIE) ionisation energies have been computed at different levels of calculations and are given in Table 5.2.

Extrapolation to the CBS limit has been carried out using four different sets of computed data (E_{CBS1} to E_{CBS4} values in Table 5.2), and the best estimated values were obtained via four different routes (E_{best1} to E_{best4} values). The final, best, computed AIE and VIE values were estimated by taking the average of the four sets of E_{best} values. Including corrections for zero-point energies (ΔZPE, using unscaled computed harmonic vibrational frequencies obtained at the MP2/6-31++G** level of calculation) of the two states involved, the best computed AIE₀ value is (12.26 ± 0.02) eV. This value is in good agreement with computed G2 and G3 values of 12.25 and 12.26 eV [13, 14], but lower than the band onset of (12.71 ± 0.05) eV measured in the PE spectrum. Also, the best estimated VIE value of (14.051 ± 0.059) eV is larger than the experimental band maximum of the first band in the PE and threshold PE spectra of (13.76 ± 0.02) and (13.76 ± 0.05) eV [13] by 0.29 eV. In references [13] and [14], the MP2(full)/6-31G(d) structures for the neutral and cation were employed for energy calculations using the G2 and G3 multilevel methods [27, 28]. MP2/6-31++G** structures were used for the neutral and cation in RCCSD(T) calculations using a number of increasingly large basis sets. The computed AIE and VIE values were then extrapolated to the CBS limit, as seen in Table 5.2.

The highest level of correlation method used in the G2 and G3 methods is the QCISD(T) method (with the 6-31G* basis set), and the largest basis set used (at the MP2 level) is of the 6-311G(2df,2p) quality (denoted as the G3 large basis set). The aim of G2 and G3 is to achieve the accuracy of the QCISD(T)/6-311++G(2df,2p) level [27, 28]. It has been noted in a recent paper on the G4 method that, an alternate and more accurate approach to the G1, G2 and G3 methods for the calculation of thermochemical data is based on CCSD(T) calculations using very large correlation consistent basis sets extrapolated to the complete basis set limit [29]. This approach is employed in the present study. In this connection, the CBS results based on RCCSD(T) calculations given in Table 5.2 should be the most reliable.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Methods</th>
<th>AIE</th>
<th>VIE</th>
<th>Nbasis*</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.091</td>
<td>13.303</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-31+G**</td>
<td>12.324</td>
<td>13.594</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-311++G(2d,2p)</td>
<td>12.187</td>
<td>13.533</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.118</td>
<td>14.002</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-311++G**</td>
<td>12.283</td>
<td>14.145</td>
<td>345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.267</td>
<td>14.179</td>
<td>415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.322</td>
<td>14.226</td>
<td>606</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.033</td>
<td>13.720</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.226</td>
<td>13.881</td>
<td>345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.201</td>
<td>13.905</td>
<td>415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.266</td>
<td>14.013</td>
<td>606</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}<em>1} = E</em>{\text{CBS}1} {1/X^3: \text{RCCSD(T)/cc-pVQZ; cc-pVTZ}}$</td>
<td>12.324</td>
<td>14.040</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{CBS}2} {1/X^3: \text{RCCSD/cc-pVQZ; cc-pVTZ}}$</td>
<td>12.375</td>
<td>14.309</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta E_{\text{T}} {\text{RCCSD(T); RCCSD/cc-pVQZ}}$</td>
<td>-0.066</td>
<td>-0.275</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}<em>2} = E</em>{\text{CBS}2} + \Delta E_{\text{T}}$</td>
<td>12.309</td>
<td>14.034</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{CBS}3} {1/X^3: \text{RCCSD/aug-cc-pVQZ; aug-cc-pVTZ}}$</td>
<td>12.349</td>
<td>14.284</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta E_{\text{T}} {\text{RCCSD(T); RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ}}$</td>
<td>-0.058</td>
<td>-0.264</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}<em>3} = E</em>{\text{CBS}3} + \Delta E_{\text{T}}$</td>
<td>12.292</td>
<td>14.021</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}<em>4} = E</em>{\text{CBS}4} {1/X^3: \text{RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVQZ; aug-cc-pVTZ}}$</td>
<td>12.295</td>
<td>14.11</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}} = E_{\text{CBS}1}$ Average</td>
<td>12.305 ± 0.019</td>
<td>14.051 ± 0.059</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta$$\text{(ZPE)}$: MP2/6-311++G(2d, 2p) frequencies</td>
<td>-0.0452</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Best estimated AIE (included ZPE correction)</td>
<td>12.26 ± 0.02</td>
<td>13.79</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G3 [14]</td>
<td>12.26</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TPES [13]</td>
<td>12.70 ± 0.05</td>
<td>13.76 ± 0.05</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VUV Absorption spectrum [14]$^b$</td>
<td>12.25 ± 0.10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Photoelectron spectrum, this work</td>
<td>12.71 ± 0.05</td>
<td>13.76 ± 0.02</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Table 5.2: Computed AIEs and VIEs (eV) of the first ionisation of CF$_3$CHF$_2$, obtained at different levels of calculations.

* Total number of contracted functions used in the calculation.

$^b$ The photoionisation mass-spectrometry study [14] did not detect any CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$ and hence no photoionisation efficiency (PIE) curve for CF$_3$CHF$_2$ was reported. The IE reported was derived from analysis of vacuum ultraviolet absorption spectrum. See original work [14].

It is clear therefore that the recommended first adiabatic ionisation energy of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ is ~0.5 eV below the measured band onset in both the PE and TPE spectra. This must arise from lack of intensity in the low energy region of the first band of this molecule because of a large geometry change on ionisation (~0.5 Å increase in the C-C bond length) and consequent poor Franck-Condon factors in the threshold region. This is supported by Franck-Condon factor calculations performed for the first photoelectron band CF$_3$CHF$_2$, by treating CF$_3$–CHF$_2$ as diatomic, using the vibrational frequencies for the C-C stretching mode in the neutral of 1484 cm$^{-1}$ and in the cation of 1128 cm$^{-1}$.
computed at the MP2/6-31++G(2d,2p) level and the computed C-C bond length change on ionisation. In order to understand the discrepancy between theory and experiment in the VIE position of the first PE band of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ mentioned above, notably the apparent loss of intensity in the experimental PE band at the computed VIE region of ca. 14.05 eV, the enthalpies of ten dissociation channels of the CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$ were considered to see whether any of these dissociation channels could affect the shape of the first PE band. To do this, some calculations were carried out to obtain the $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ and/or AIE$_0$ values of CF$_3$CHF$_2$, CF$_3$CHF and CHF$_2$ and/or their cations, because some of these values are either not available or cannot be considered as very reliable. The results of the relevant $ab$ initio calculations are summarised in Tables 5.3 and 5.4.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>$\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$^+$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>-264.5</td>
<td>-201</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVQZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>-265.5</td>
<td>-201.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS(1/X$^3$:cc-pVTZ;cc-pVQZ)</td>
<td>-266.3 (20)</td>
<td>-201.3 (17)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Best $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$, b**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>AIE</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$^+$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.033</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVQZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.201</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS(1/X$^3$:RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ,cc-pVQZ)</td>
<td>12.324</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Best AIE$_0$**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>AIE</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$^+$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVDZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.580$^d$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.571$^d$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS(1/X$^3$:RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVDZ,aug-cc-pVTZ)</td>
<td>9.568$^d$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Best AIE$_0$**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>AIE</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF</th>
<th>CF$_3$CHF$^+$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVDZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.571 (4)$^d$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 5.3: Computed enthalpies of formation ($\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ in kcal.mol$^{-1}$) of CF$_3$CHF$_2$, CF$_3$CHF, and their cations, and their computed AIE$_0$ (eV) obtained at different levels of calculation.

$^a$ The $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ and CF$_3$CHF were evaluated by considering the isodesmic reactions (5.1) and (5.4), respectively. The $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ of their cations were evaluated by $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$(neutral) + AIE$_0$ (see footnote b).

$^b$ The CBS value of $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ of the neutral plus the best AIE$_0$ value.

$^c$ For CF$_3$CHF$_2$, see Table 5.2 for the evaluation of the best AIE$_0$ value, which is the average of four best estimated values; see text.

$^d$ E. P. F. Lee private communication; unpublished results.

The best computed $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ values of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ and CF$_3$CHF are (-266.3 ± 2.0) and -(201.3 ± 1.7) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ (by considering reactions (5.1) and (5.4), both isodesmic reactions; see Table 5.3), respectively. It should be noted that the quoted uncertainties are the maximum uncertainties (considering values used in the evaluation, which give the largest uncertainties, and/or the largest uncertainties of the values used), and they are mainly from uncertainties in available $\Delta H_{f,298K}^0$ values of other species involved in the reactions considered. The computed uncertainties in the reaction enthalpies are only
(± 0.78) and (± 0.17) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) (the difference between the CBS and RCCSD(T)/cc-
pVQZ values), respectively. Employing these \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\) values, and the best computed
AIE\(_0\) values of (12.26 ± 0.02) and (9.571 ± 0.004) eV, for CF\(_3\)CHF\(_2\) and CF\(_3\)CHF
(Table 5.3), the best computed \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\) values of their cations are estimated to be (16.4
± 2.2) and (19.4 ± 1.8) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\), respectively. Also, for CHF\(_2\) employing the best
computed AIE\(_0\) of (8.70 ± 0.01) eV obtained here, shown in Table 5.4 below, and the
best available computed \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\) value of -57.9 kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) from reference [30],
\(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\)(CHF\(_2^+\)) is estimated to be (142.7 ± 0.2) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\).

\begin{table}[h]
\centering
\begin{tabular}{|c|c|c|c|}
\hline
Method & AIE & VIE & Nbasis\(^a\) \\
\hline
B3LYP/6-31++G** & 8.96 & & \\
MP2/6-31++G** & 8.6 & & \\
RCCSD/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 8.661 & 10.391 & 286 \\
RCCSD/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 8.667 & 10.448 & 461 \\
RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 8.637 & 10.251 & 286 \\
RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 8.644 & 10.267 & 461 \\
CBS{1/X:RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVQZ,aug-cc-pV5Z} & 8.65 ± 0.01 & 10.28 ± 0.01 & \\
\hline
\end{tabular}
\caption{Computed first AIEs and VIEs (eV) of the CHF\(_2^+\) \(\tilde{X}'A_1\) + e \(\rightarrow\) CHF\(_2\) \(\tilde{X}'A'\) ionisation obtained at different levels of calculations.}
\end{table}

\(^a\) Total number of contracted functions used in the calculation.

The quoted uncertainty of (± 0.2) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) is based on the uncertainty in the best
computed AIE\(_0\) value (the difference between the CBS and RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pV5Z
value). However, comparing the best \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\)(CHF\(_2^+\)) value obtained in this work with
previously available recommended values, a more realistic maximum uncertainty is
estimated to be 1.5 kcal.mol\(^{-1}\). Available \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\) values of the species involved in the
ten dissociation channels of the CF\(_3\)CHF\(_2^+\) cation considered are compiled in Table 5.5.

The most reliable \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^0\) values available for these species were used to evaluate the
enthalpies of reaction for the ten dissociation reactions of CF\(_3\)CHF\(_2^+\) considered, which
are tabulated in Table 5.6. It can be seen from Table 5.6 that, only the CF\(_3\)CHF\(_2^+\) \(\rightarrow\)
CF\(_2\)CF\(_2^+\) + HF dissociation channel (labelled as reaction 7) is exothermic. However, the
barrier to the transition state on the reaction coordinate for this channel is expected to be
high, because this reaction is expected to proceed via breaking of both CF and CH bonds and involves a large geometry change.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>$\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>IE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3$CHF$_2$</td>
<td>-266.3(20)</td>
<td>CBS reaction 5.1$^c$ (isodesmic)</td>
<td>Present work</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$</td>
<td>16.4(22)</td>
<td>Calc Present Work</td>
<td>Best $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (CF$_3$CHF$_2$) + IE</td>
<td>12.26(1) eV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3$</td>
<td>-111.7(5)</td>
<td>Thermodynamic Network</td>
<td>Ref.[26]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3^+$</td>
<td>97.6(22)</td>
<td>Average of recent publ. values</td>
<td>Ref.[26,41,42,49,50]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHF$_2$</td>
<td>-57.884</td>
<td>Calc CBS+CV+rel+SO</td>
<td>Ref.[30]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHF$_2^+$</td>
<td>142.7(2)</td>
<td>AIE$_m$(CBS)</td>
<td>Best $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (CHF$_2$) + IE</td>
<td>8.70(1) eV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHF$_3$</td>
<td>-166.18(50)</td>
<td>Thermodynamic Network</td>
<td>Ref.[26]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHF$_3^+$</td>
<td>153.2(12)</td>
<td>Average of recent publ. values</td>
<td>Ref.[37,38,51,52]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_2$</td>
<td>-45.7(3)</td>
<td>Thermodynamic Network</td>
<td>Ref.[26]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_2^+$</td>
<td>216.3(8)</td>
<td>AIE from TPES; ref.[35]</td>
<td>Best $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (CF$_2$) + IE</td>
<td>11.362(5) eV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_4$</td>
<td>-223.1(1)</td>
<td>Thermodynamic Network</td>
<td>Ref.[226]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_4^+$</td>
<td>116.4(20)</td>
<td>G3 MP2</td>
<td>Ref.[30]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHF</td>
<td>36.3(6)</td>
<td>Average of recent values</td>
<td>Ref.[26,30,49]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHF$^+$</td>
<td>268.3(18)</td>
<td>IE (REMPI) ref.[47]</td>
<td>Ave. $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (CHF) + IE</td>
<td>10.06(5) eV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_2$CF$_2$</td>
<td>-160.6(8)</td>
<td>Average of recent values</td>
<td>Ref.[26,30,49]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_2$CF$_2^+$</td>
<td>73.2(13)</td>
<td>AIE from PES; ref.[32]</td>
<td>Ave. $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (CF$_2$CF$_2$) + IE</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HF</td>
<td>-65.2(2)</td>
<td>Average of recent values</td>
<td>Refs.[24,54]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HF$^+$</td>
<td>304.8(2)</td>
<td>IE from PES; refs.[31,48]</td>
<td>Ave. $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (HF) + IE</td>
<td>16.044(3) eV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>18.970(72)</td>
<td>Review 1984</td>
<td>Ref.[24]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F$^+$</td>
<td>420.75</td>
<td>IE from ref.[38]</td>
<td>$\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (F) + IE</td>
<td>17.42282 eV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3$CHF</td>
<td>-201.3(17)</td>
<td>Calc CBS reaction 5.4$^c$</td>
<td>Present work</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3$CHF$^+$</td>
<td>19.4(18)</td>
<td>Calc AIE$_m$(CBS)$^d$</td>
<td>$\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (XΦ$_3$XHF) + IE</td>
<td>9.571(4) eV</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 5.5: Enthalpies of formation, $\Delta H_{298K}^{\circ}$ (kcal.mol$^{-1}$) and ionisation energy (IE in eV) of species used in this work, related to the dissociation of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ and CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$.

$^a$ The value given is with reaction (5.1). With reactions (5.2) and (5.3), the corresponding values obtained are -264.0 and -264.5 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ respectively; the electron convention we are using is the zero electron energy convention.

$^b$ See Table 5.4.

$^c$ See Table 5.3.

$^d$ See footnote d of Table 5.3.

In addition, the fact that no CF$_2$CF$_2^+$ was detected in the TPEPICO study of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ [13] also suggests a fairly high reaction barrier for this dissociation channel. This is also in reasonably good agreement with the experimental results obtained from the TPEPICO [13] study, which show that in the region of the ground electronic state of CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$, the first fragment ion observed is CHF$_2^+$ with an appearance energy of (12.75 ± 0.05) eV. Because the neutral molecule has a significantly shorter computed C-
C equilibrium bond length than the cation as mentioned above, vertical ionisation at the computed VIE of 14.03 eV, will access a region of the repulsive wall of the cation, which is ca. 1.1 eV above the CF₃ + CHF₂⁺ dissociation limit (at a computed IE of (12.89 ± 0.20) eV). Consequently, there is a loss of intensity in the PE band at the computed VIE region of ca. 14.0 eV due to this dissociation channel. The above considerations provide a plausible explanation for the discrepancy between theory and experiment in the VIE position (or band maximum) of the first band in the PE spectrum of CF₃CHF₂, involving loss of intensity in the high IE region of this PE band. Another dissociation channel of CF₃CHF₂⁺, to give CF₃⁺ + CHF₂ (reaction 1 in Table 5.6), was observed in reference [13] at an appearance energy of (13.29 ± 0.06) eV i.e. (0.54 ± 0.11) eV above CHF₂⁺ + CF₃. This is consistent with the observed difference in computed reaction enthalpies for these two reactions of 0.38 eV shown in Table 5.6 below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Dissociation products</th>
<th>ΔH_{298}^{RX} (kcal/mol)</th>
<th>ΔV_{298}^{RX} (eV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>CF₃⁺ + CHF₂</td>
<td>23.3 (59)</td>
<td>1.01 (26)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>CF₃ + CHF₂⁺</td>
<td>14.6 (42)</td>
<td>0.63 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>CHF₃⁺ + CF₂</td>
<td>90.9 (37)</td>
<td>3.94 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>CHF₃ + CF₂⁺</td>
<td>33.7 (35)</td>
<td>1.46 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>CF₃⁺ + CHF</td>
<td>136.3 (48)</td>
<td>5.91 (21)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>CF₄ + CHF⁺</td>
<td>28.6 (41)</td>
<td>1.24 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>CF₂CF₂⁺ + HF</td>
<td>-8.4 (37)</td>
<td>-0.36 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>CF₃CF₂ + HF⁺</td>
<td>127.8 (32)</td>
<td>5.54 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>CF₃CHF + F⁺</td>
<td>203.1 (40)</td>
<td>8.81 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>CF₃CHF⁺⁺ + F</td>
<td>22.0 (41)</td>
<td>0.95 (18)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 5.6**: Computed reaction enthalpies of various dissociation channels of CF₃CHF₂⁺ obtained by using the most reliable ΔH_{298}^{ø} values available for the species involved (see Table 5.5).  

Computed VIE values to low-lying cationic states of CF₃CHF₂ obtained at different levels of theory are given in Table 5.7. It is clear that the computed VIE values obtained at the Hartree-Fock (HF) level via Koopmans’ Theorem are too high. Computed VIE values obtained at the B3LYP level (computed time-dependent (TD-B3LYP) excitation energies of the cation plus computed or experimental first VIE value) and at the IP-EOM-CCSD level employing different basis sets are compared in Figure 5.3. It can be seen that basis set effects on the EOM-CCSD VIE values are small, at least with the three basis sets used. Also, the B3LYP VIE values are quite close to the EOM-CCSD values, though the former values are more spread out, and comparison of Figures 5.1 and 5.3 shows that their agreement with experiment is not as good as the EOM-CCSD
VIE values. The computed EOM-CCSD/cc-pVTZ VIEs have been plotted on Figure 5.1. It can be seen from Figure 5.1 that the agreement between the EOM-CCSD VIE values and the experimental PE spectrum is very good. Particularly, the groupings of computed VIEs agree very well with the experimental band groupings and relative intensities.

![Graph showing VIEs comparison](image)

**Figure 5.3:** Comparison of computed VIEs of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ obtained with the IP-EOM-CCSD method using different basis sets and with B3LYP calculations (lowest panel).

The comparison shown in Figure 5.1 of the experimental bands and computed VIEs, obtained at the IP-EOM-CCSD/cc-pVTZ level (see Table 5.7, column 9) allows the ionic states associated with each band to be established. The first band corresponds to ionisation to the X$^2$A$'$ ionic state obtained from the (18a$'$ $^{-1}$ ionisation, the second band corresponds to ionisation to the $^2$A$^\prime$, $^2$A$^\prime\prime$ and $^2$A$^\prime\prime\prime$ ionic states obtained from the (17a$'$ $^{-1}$, (11a$''$ $^{-1}$ and (10a$''$) $^{-1}$ ionisations, and the third band corresponds to ionisation to the $^2$A$^\prime\prime$ and $^2$A$'$ ionic states obtained from the (9a$''$) $^{-1}$ and (16a$'$) $^{-1}$ ionisations. The electronic structure and high-lying occupied molecular orbitals of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ have been presented and discussed in reference [13], and hence this will not be repeated here.
Table 5.7: Computed VIEs (eV) to low-lying cationic states of CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$, obtained from Hartree-Fock (by Koopmans’ Theorem; HF-KT) and time-dependent density functional theory (B3LYP-TD; computed excitation energies (E$_{ex}$) of low-lying cationic states plus the first VIE) calculations employing the 6-311++G(2d,2p) basis set, and obtained from IP-EOM-CCSD calculations using different basis sets.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>HF-KT</th>
<th>B3LYP-TD</th>
<th>IP-EOM-CCSD$^c$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>VIE</td>
<td>$E_{ex}$</td>
<td>VIE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18a'</td>
<td>15.536</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>14.051$^a$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17a'</td>
<td>17.591</td>
<td>1.688</td>
<td>15.739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11a&quot;</td>
<td>18.144</td>
<td>1.081</td>
<td>15.132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10a&quot;</td>
<td>18.408</td>
<td>1.46</td>
<td>15.511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9a&quot;</td>
<td>18.775</td>
<td>2.591</td>
<td>16.642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16a'</td>
<td>18.806</td>
<td>1.848</td>
<td>15.899</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8a&quot;</td>
<td>19.256</td>
<td>1.88</td>
<td>15.931</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15a'</td>
<td>19.933</td>
<td>2.673</td>
<td>16.724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7a&quot;</td>
<td>19.976</td>
<td>2.743</td>
<td>16.794</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14a'</td>
<td>20.026</td>
<td>3.238</td>
<td>17.289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13a'</td>
<td>22.109</td>
<td>5.459</td>
<td>19.51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5a&quot;</td>
<td>23.396</td>
<td>6.405</td>
<td>20.45</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Computed best First VIE from Table 5.2.

$^b$ Experimental first VIE from the He(I) photoelectron spectrum.

$^c$ AVDZ and VTZ are the aug-cc-pVDZ and cc-pVTZ basis sets. The total numbers of contracted basis functions of the three basis sets used in the IP-EOM-CCSD calculations are 139, 170 and 244, respectively.

5.3.3 Thermal Decomposition Studies of CF$_3$CHF$_2$

Spectra were recorded as a function of furnace temperature up to 1600 °C where almost complete decomposition of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ occurred. Two typical spectra, recorded at furnace temperatures of 1000 and 1200 °C, are shown in Figure 5.4, denoted as A and B respectively. For each pyrolysis spectrum recorded, the intensity of the first PE band of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ was normalised to the intensity of the corresponding first band observed in the pyrolysed spectrum and its overall contribution was then subtracted. Subtracting off the spectral contribution of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ from the pyrolysed spectra allowed the first band of CF$_3$H to be observed more clearly. Then, the calibrated spectrum of CF$_3$H, recorded in a separate experiment, was used to remove its contribution to the pyrolysed spectrum by matching the intensity of the first PE band to the corresponding band seen in the pyrolysed spectrum. Monitoring the observed PE band intensities at different furnace temperatures allowed a plot to be made of the normalised band intensities as a function of temperature. This is shown in Figure 5.5.
**Figure 5.4:** PE spectra recorded from the thermal decomposition of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ at furnace temperatures of A. 1000 °C and B. 1200 °C respectively.
Figure 5.5: Normalised experimental band intensities of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ and observed thermal decomposition products plotted as a function of temperature. These plots were obtained, for each molecule considered, by taking the most intense first band observed during the pyrolysis and normalising all of the other first band intensities for that molecule, measured at different stages of the pyrolysis, to that value.

The molecules observed on pyrolysis of CF$_3$CHF$_2$, diluted in argon, are HF, C$_2$F$_4$, CF$_2$ and CF$_3$H. The first three of these molecules were the most straightforward to identify in spectra recorded on pyrolysis as the first band of HF is sharp at 16.04 eV VIE [31]. C$_2$F$_4$ shows a broad structured first band between 10.0 and 11.5 eV (AIE 10.12 eV, VIE 10.54 eV [32-34]) and the first band of CF$_2$ is broad and is centred at 12.24 VIE [35-36]. Both the C$_2$F$_4$ and CF$_2$ first bands are not overlapped with the spectrum of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ or any bands produced on pyrolysis, and although the first band of HF overlaps with the second band of CF$_3$CHF$_2$, it is sharp and easy to identify. The first band of CF$_3$H occurs between the first and second bands of CF$_3$CHF$_2$. Separate spectra were recorded for CF$_3$H. The first VIE was calibrated as (14.78 ± 0.01) eV which compares well with previous VIE values of 14.77 and 14.80 eV [37-39].

It appears that at the lowest temperatures at which decomposition occurs, 700-1000 °C, HF + C$_2$F$_4$ are produced followed by decomposition of C$_2$F$_4$ to CF$_2$, i.e. reaction (5.5), ($\Delta H_{f,298K}^0 = (40.5 \pm 3.0)$ kcal.mol$^{-1}$), occurs followed by reaction (5.6), ($\Delta H_{f,298K}^0 = (69.2 \pm 1.4)$ kcal.mol$^{-1}$).
\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{F}_4 + \text{HF} \quad (5.5)
\]
\[
\text{C}_2\text{F}_4 \rightarrow 2\text{CF}_2 \quad (5.6)
\]

At higher temperatures, above 1000 °C, it appears that reaction (5.7), \((\Delta H_{f,298K}^\theta = (54.4 \pm 2.8) \text{ kcal.mol}^{-1})\), begins to become significant, and at approximately 1200 °C \(\text{C}_2\text{F}_4\) maximises and drops in intensity at higher temperatures whilst \(\text{CF}_3\text{H}\) continues to increase. In this region \(\text{CF}_2\) also increases as it is produced from reaction (5.7) and from \(\text{C}_2\text{F}_4\) decomposition (reaction (5.6)).

\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 \rightarrow \text{CF}_2 + \text{CF}_3\text{H} \quad (5.7)
\]

Use of the most reliable \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^\theta\) values for the reactants and products in reactions (5.5-5.7), shown in Table 5.5, leads to the reaction enthalpies for reaction (5.5), (5.6) and (5.7) shown above. Reaction (5.5), involving HF elimination, is the least endothermic and is observed first at the lowest temperatures. Once \(\text{C}_2\text{F}_4\) is produced, it appears that it can decompose via reaction (5.6). Reaction (5.7) is more endothermic than reaction (5.5) and is observed at higher temperatures. Although reaction enthalpies have been computed for reaction (5.5), (5.6) and (5.7), it should be noted that no activation energies have been calculated. These studies monitor the gas-phase products as a function of temperature in a flow system and are therefore valuable in providing information of how \(\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2\) decomposes on heating (e.g. in a combustion environment). However, they provide no information on the mechanism of the decomposition reactions. For example, some decomposition of \(\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2\) on the heated furnace surface or decomposition via a free radical mechanism cannot be ruled out although no evidence of free radicals such as F or \(\text{CF}_3\) was seen in the spectra; for example the first band of F atoms is expected at 17.42 eV [40] and the first band of \(\text{CF}_3\) is expected to be broad with an AIE of \((9.05 \pm 0.01)\) eV and a VIE of \((10.86 \pm 0.01)\) eV [41-45].

5.4 Conclusion

The pyrolysis products of flowing \(\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2\) diluted with argon have been studied as a function of temperature. The results obtained have been interpreted in terms of two decomposition reactions of \(\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2\), reactions (5.5) and (5.7), as well as the reaction, \(\text{C}_2\text{F}_4 \rightarrow 2\text{CF}_2\).
The PE spectrum of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ has been interpreted and assigned using state-of-the-art \textit{ab initio} calculations. Comparison with the published TPE spectrum show good agreement for the first band but the higher energy bands appear less well resolved in the TPE spectrum. This arises because autoionisation from high-lying Rydberg states, which are parts of series converging to higher ionisation thresholds, contribute to the intensity in the higher ionisation region (above 14.0 eV). The experimental first VIE is lower than the computed first VIE (by \(~0.3\) eV). This is rationalised in terms of dissociation of CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$ in the vertical transition region from the neutral. Dissociation energies of the ground state of CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$ to CHF$_2^+$ + CF$_3$ and to CF$_3^+$ + CHF$_2$ are calculated and the values obtained support this. The recommended first adiabatic ionisation energy of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ is \(~0.5\) eV below the measured band onset in both the PE and TPE spectra. This arises from lack of intensity in the low energy region of the first band of this molecule because of a large geometry change on ionisation and consequent poor Franck-Condon factors in the threshold region. Reliable experimental determination of this AIE will probably only be achieved by recording a high-resolution zero-electron kinetic energy (ZEKE-PFI) spectrum of this molecule, possibly by a two-colour process involving initial excitation to an excited state with an equilibrium geometry closer to that of the ion than that of the neutral ground state.

The thermal decomposition of a second, larger, HFC fire suppressant, 2-H heptafluoropropane (CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$), at low pressure, heavily diluted in argon, has also been carried out in this project and has been studied, using PES, over the temperature range 600-2000 °C using the same RF heating system as used in this study. This investigation is discussed in the following chapter.
References


http://www.arap.org/docs/fire.html


[26] A. Burcat and B. Ruscic, "Third Millennium Ideal Gas and Condensed Phase Thermochemical Database for Combustion with updates from Active Thermochemical (AcTc) Tables" ANL-05/20 and TAE 960 Technion-IIT, Aerospace Engineering, and Argonne National Laboratory, Chemistry Division, September 2005 (last update May 2008).


Chapter 6

A Study of 2-H Heptafluoropropane and its Thermal Decomposition using PES and \textit{ab initio} Molecular Orbital Calculations

2-H heptafluoropropane (also referred to as HFP, HFC-227 or FM-200) is widely used as a fire suppressant replacing halogenated compounds such as CF$_3$Br (Halon 1301) and CF$_2$ClBr (Halon 1211) whose production has been banned under international agreements such as the Montreal Protocol because of their detrimental effect on the earth’s ozone layer. However, the environmental effects of halon alternatives have not been fully established. For example, hydrofluorocarbons (HFCs) such as HFC-227 are expected to have long lifetimes in the atmosphere because of their slow reactions with key free radicals such as OH and they may have significant global warming potentials (GWPs). It is also very important to investigate the thermal behaviour of halon alternatives, particularly investigating what products are formed on pyrolysis, if they are to be used successfully as fire suppressants.

As a first step towards establishing how CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ suppresses and extinguishes a flame, its thermal decomposition was studied in this work using photoelectron spectroscopy (PES). Despite previous experimental [1-5] and theoretical studies [6] of the thermal decomposition of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$, its primary thermal decomposition pathways are still not well established. Some spectroscopic studies of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ in flames have been made. The infrared spectrum of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ has been studied in the gas-phase [7].
Fourier-transform infrared (FTIR) spectroscopy and laser-induced breakdown spectroscopy (LIBS) have also been used to monitor CF₃CHFCF₃ and other products in fires inhibited by CF₃CHFCF₃ [8, 9]. Hynes et al. [1] carried out a shock tube study of the pyrolysis of CF₃CHFCF₃ over the temperature range 1200-1500 K at pressures between 16 and 18 atm. (which are much higher than the pressures used in this work). Product analysis was performed using gas chromatography (GC-MS) and FTIR spectroscopy with the aim of developing a detailed chemical mechanism to describe the decomposition of CF₃CHFCF₃. The results of the experiments and modelling showed that the major initiation reaction was bond fission (i.e. CF₃CHFCF₃ → CF₃ + CF₃CHF).

The abstraction of the secondary H-atom by F atoms was also predicted to be important whereas the 1, 2 HF elimination process (CF₃CHFCF₃ → CF₃CF=CF₂ + HF) was slower. Yamamoto et al. [2] studied the thermal decomposition of CF₃CHFCF₃ heated in a flow-system at atmospheric pressure, diluted 5% v/v in air, and used GC/MS to analyse the products. Under the conditions used, it was found that CF₃CHFCF₃ began to decompose at 500 °C and had fully decomposed by 800 °C. The main decomposition product was found to be perfluoroisobutane.

In a related computational study by Peterson and Francisco [6], ab initio and density functional methods have been used to investigate twelve possible primary decomposition pathways of CF₃CHFCF₃. Reaction enthalpies were calculated for all twelve pathways and energy barriers were calculated for the five most thermodynamically favoured (least endothermic) reactions. Two possible decomposition reactions are,

\[ \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3 \rightarrow \text{CF}_3\text{CF} = \text{CF}_2 + \text{HF} \]  
\[ \text{(6.1)} \]

\[ \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3 \rightarrow \text{CF}_3\text{CHF} + \text{CF}_3 \]  
\[ \text{(6.2)} \]

Reaction enthalpies (\(\Delta H_{f,298K}^\circ\)) were calculated for reactions (6.1) and (6.2) as 34.8 and 92.3 kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) respectively using QCISD(T)/6-311G(d,p)//UMP2/6-31G(d) methods. Reaction (6.1) is the least endothermic decomposition reaction and reaction (6.2) is the initiation reaction proposed in the shock tube study [1]. Ab initio and DFT calculations have been performed previously in the Southampton PES group on CF₃CHFCF₃ and its reactions with fluorine and hydrogen atoms [10-12]. The heat of formation of CF₃CHFCF₃, \(\Delta H_{f,298K}^\circ\) (CF₃CHFCF₃), was computed using DFT, MP2, RCCSD(T) and
model chemistry methods (G2(MP2), G2, G3 and CBS-Q) employing three reaction schemes, and the RCCSD(T)/CBS limit value was derived as (−370.6 ± 2.3) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) [10]. This is believed to be the most reliable value available for \(\Delta H_{f,298}^\emptyset\) (CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\)). The reaction enthalpy (298 K) and barrier height (0 K) for H-atom abstraction with fluorine atoms (CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) + F → CF\(_3\)CFCF\(_3\) + HF) have also been calculated using high level \textit{ab initio} methods to give the recommended values of (−34.7 ± 1.0) and (−0.9 ± 0.9) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\)[11]. Similarly, recommended values for the reaction enthalpy (298 K) and barrier height (0 K) for the H-atom reaction CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) + H → CF\(_3\)CFCF\(_3\) + H\(_2\) are (−0.7 ± 0.7) and (13.3 ± 0.5) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) [12].

In this work, the photoelectron spectra of CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) and its pyrolysis products have been recorded as a function of temperature in a flow system. In addition, state-of-the-art \textit{ab initio} calculations have been performed on CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) and CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3^+\), and fragments obtained from CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) and CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3^+\). These calculations were carried out to obtain reliable adiabatic and vertical ionisation energy (AIE/VIE) values in order to assist interpretation of the experimental PE spectra. This investigation was performed in parallel with a related study on CF\(_3\)CHF\(_2\), which is discussed in the previous chapter.

6.1 Experimental

The PE spectrum of CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) was recorded using the big spectrometer (described in section 3.1 of Chapter 3) with a high temperature RF heating system coupled to the ionisation region (as described in section 3.3 of Chapter 3). Typical operating resolution of the spectrometer throughout this work was 20-25 meV, as measured for the (3p)\(^{-1}\) ionisation of argon [13, 14]. PE spectra of CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) (Remtec, >99%) were recorded and calibrated by admitting the sample into the spectrometer at the same time as argon and methyl iodide [15-17], as previously described in section 5.1 of Chapter 5. PE spectra of the assigned pyrolysis products, CF\(_3\)H (Aldrich, 98%) and hexafluoropropene, C\(_2\)F\(_6\) (Fluorochem > 99%), were also recorded and calibrated in the same way. The PE spectrum of C\(_2\)F\(_6\) (Fluorochem, 99.9%) was also recorded and calibrated. However C\(_2\)F\(_6\) was not observed in the spectra recorded during pyrolysis. The experimental method used to study the thermal decomposition of CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) was the same as that for the thermal decomposition investigation of HFC-125 (CF\(_3\)CHF\(_2\))
described in Chapter 5. The apparatus used was also the same and has been previously
described in section 3.3 of Chapter 3.

6.2 Computational Details

Calculations were carried out on CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$, and the possible pyrolysis products
CF$_3$CF=CF$_2$, CF$_3$CHF, and CF$_3$CF. For neutral and cationic states, geometry
optimisation and harmonic frequency calculations were carried out using the
Gaussian03 suite of programs [18], using the density functional theory (DFT) method
with the B3LYP functional and the MP2 method. Single energy calculations for
improved relative electronic energies were performed at the RCCSD(T) level employing
the MOLPRO programs [19]. Various standard basis sets were used, and extrapolation
of the computed first adiabatic (AIE) and vertical (VIE) ionisation energies to the
complete basis set (CBS) limit was carried out using the 1/X$^3$ formula [20]. In addition,
higher vertical ionisation energies have been computed at different levels of theory.
These include the Koopmans’ Theorem (negatives of computed Hartree-Fock orbital
energies of the neutral molecule, discussed in section 4.1.4 of Chapter 4), time-
dependent density functional theory (computed TD-DFT excitation energies of the
cation using the B3LYP functional plus the first VIE) and equations-of-motion coupled-
cluster single and double excitation (IP-EOM-CCSD) methods using different standard
basis sets. The IP-EOM-CCSD calculations were performed using the ACES2 suite of
programs [21]. These calculations were performed by Dr E. P. F. Lee of the
Southampton PES group and are included here for completeness.

6.3 Results and Discussion

6.3.1 The photoelectron Spectra of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ and C$_3$F$_6$

The He(I) photoelectron spectrum of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ shows six bands (Figure 6.1). The
VIEs of these bands, as well as the measured onset of the first band were averaged over
ten expanded spectra. As can been seen in Figure 6.1, six main bands are observed in
this spectrum with VIE values of (14.18 ± 0.01), (15.92 ± 0.01), (16.68 ± 0.01), (17.49
± 0.01), (18.65 ± 0.01) and (19.54 ± 0.01) eV. The AIE of the first PE band was
measured to be (13.11 ± 0.01) eV. This spectrum does not appear to have been recorded
before and its assignment is discussed in the next section.
A good quality photoelectron spectrum of $\text{C}_3\text{F}_6$ has also not been published before. This was needed to analyse the spectra recorded on pyrolysis of $\text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3$ on the same spectrometer. The photoelectron spectrum of hexafluoropropene, $\text{C}_3\text{F}_6$, one of the main pyrolysis products of $\text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3$ is presented in Figure 6.2. As can be seen, four main bands are observed in this spectrum with VIE values of $(11.02 \pm 0.02)$, $(14.61 \pm 0.04)$, $(15.88 \pm 0.04)$ and $(16.91 \pm 0.05)$ eV. The first band shows resolved vibrational structure with at least six regularly spaced components. The first vibrational component (AIE position) is measured at $(10.63 \pm 0.02)$ eV. As shown by the electronic structure calculations, this band arises from ionisation from the outermost filled molecular orbital which is $\pi$-bonding in character, and the vibrational structure arises from excitation of the C-C stretching mode in the ion (the C=C bond in the neutral). Measurement of the component separations and use of an anharmonic oscillator expression (see equations 2.16 to 2.18 in section 2.11 of Chapter 2 for a detailed description) for the vibration excited on ionisation gave $\omega_e = (1640 \pm 30)$ cm$^{-1}$ and $\omega_e \chi_e = (16 \pm 10)$ cm$^{-1}$ for the

**Figure 6.1:** Photoelectron spectrum of $\text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3$ recorded with HeI (21.22 eV) radiation. The vertical lines on this diagram are vertical ionisation energies computed with EOM-CCSD/aug-cc-pVDZ calculations.
vibration excited in the ion. This value of $\omega_e$ compares with 1797 cm$^{-1}$ for the C=C mode in the neutral molecule determined by gas phase infrared spectroscopy [22]. This reduced value of the C=C stretching mode in the ionic state is consistent with ionisation from the outermost C=C $\pi$-bonding orbital. Previous studies of this molecule by PES include an early study by Cullen et al. [23] in which only the first AIE was quoted at 10.62 eV, and a later study by Freiser and Beauchamp in which a low resolution spectrum was published and the AIE and VIE of the first band were quoted at 10.62 and 11.10 eV respectively [24]. Later a threshold PE spectrum of C$_3$F$_6$ was recorded by Tuckett et al. [25]. This showed regular vibrational structure in the first band, with an average vibrational spacing measured as 1613 cm$^{-1}$, consistent with the PE spectrum obtained in this present work. A comparison of the PE spectrum of this work and TPE spectrum of reference [25] is shown in Figure 6.2.

![Figure 6.2: PE spectra of hexafluoropropene: comparison of the PE spectrum obtained in this work with the threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum taken from reference [25].](image-url)

It can be seen from Figure 6.2, that the first band is much weaker in the TPE spectrum than in the PE spectrum, although the observed AIE and VIE values are essentially the same. Also, the resolution of the bands in the 13.0-18.0 eV region is poorer in the TPE.
spectrum and a band maximum (at 16.20 eV) is observed in the TPE spectrum which is not present in the PE spectrum. This effect was also observed on comparing PE and TPE spectra of CF₃CHF₂ (see Figure 5.2 of Chapter 5) and arises because TPE band envelopes have contributions both from direct ionisation, as in PE spectra, and autoionisation from highly excited neutral states which lie above an ionisation threshold. These excited states are Rydberg states which are members of series which converge to higher ionisation thresholds.

6.3.2 Results of Electronic Structure Calculations

6.3.2.1 CF₃CHFCF₃ and its Cation

Geometry optimisation and harmonic vibrational frequency calculations on CF₃CHFCF₃ have been reported previously [6] and hence the discussion of these results will not be repeated here. The ground state of the neutral has a Cₛ structure [6] with the plane of symmetry through the central carbon atom perpendicular to the CCC skeleton.

For the ground electronic state of the cation, CF₃CHFCF₃⁺ (resulting from the (18a''⁻¹⁻) ionisation of CF₃CHFCF₃), geometry optimisation under a constraint of Cₛ symmetry (as with CF₃CHFCF₃) led to a saddle point with an imaginary frequency of 583.3i cm⁻¹ at the B3LYP/6-31++G** level of calculation. This vibrational mode is of a'' symmetry and consists of mainly asymmetric stretching of the two CC bonds in the CCC skeleton. However, MP2/6-31++G** geometry optimisation gave a true minimum with all real frequencies (the 2A'' state resulting from the (18a'⁻¹⁻) ionisation of the neutral molecule; the two equivalent CC bond lengths are 1.6847 Å, 1.5285 Å in the neutral). Further geometry optimisation with an asymmetric CCC skeleton of C₁ symmetry (i.e. two different CC bond lengths) led to a true minimum, with long and short CC bonds, at all levels of calculations: B3LYP/6-31++G** (2.120 and 1.550 Å), MP2/6-31++G** (5D) (2.038; 1.541 Å) and MP2/6-31++G** (2.039; 1.541 Å). The MP2/6-31++ G** Cₛ true minimum (the 2A'' state) mentioned above is 4.20 kcal.mol⁻¹ higher in energy (PUMP2 energies) than the C₁ true minimum. At the RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** level of calculation, the C₁ structure is 6.44 kcal.mol⁻¹ lower in energy than the Cₛ structure. For the C₁ structure, the RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ single energy calculation was the largest calculation carried out with the computation resource available (calculations on the lower, Cₛ symmetry structure are considerably more demanding than the Cₛ.
structure). For the $C_3s$ structure, the RCCSD/cc-pVQZ single energy calculation was the largest calculation possible and it was not possible to complete the calculation of the perturbative triple excitations in the RCCSD(T)/cc-pVQZ calculation with the computational resources available. For calculations of VIEs, the MP2/6-31++G** (5D) geometry of the neutral (a $C_3s$ structure from a previous study [10]) was used.

Computed first adiabatic ionisation energies (AIEs) and vertical ionisation energies (VIEs) obtained at different levels of calculation are summarised in Table 6.1.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method/basis//geometry</th>
<th>AIE ($C_1$)</th>
<th>AIE ($C_3s$)</th>
<th>VIE</th>
<th>Nb$^a$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.426</td>
<td>13.365</td>
<td></td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-31++G** (5D)</td>
<td>12.726</td>
<td>15.32</td>
<td></td>
<td>186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-311++G(2d,2p)</td>
<td>12.71</td>
<td>12.892</td>
<td></td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**(5D)</td>
<td>12.49</td>
<td>14.202</td>
<td></td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.49</td>
<td>12.863</td>
<td></td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/cc-pVTZ//B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.483</td>
<td>14.35</td>
<td>483</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**(5D)</td>
<td>13.105</td>
<td>14.389</td>
<td>580</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>13.105</td>
<td>14.389</td>
<td>580</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.406</td>
<td>12.866</td>
<td>314</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**(5D)</td>
<td>12.406</td>
<td>13.886</td>
<td>314</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.406</td>
<td>12.866</td>
<td>314</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.408</td>
<td>14.045</td>
<td>483</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**(5D)</td>
<td>12.863</td>
<td>14.389</td>
<td>580</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>12.863</td>
<td>14.389</td>
<td>580</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{CBS}(1/X^3)$:RCCSD/cc-pVTZ; cc-pVQZ</td>
<td>13.123</td>
<td>14.526</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta E_{(1)}$: (RCCSD(T); RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ)</td>
<td>-0.151</td>
<td>-0.305</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta E_{(2)}$: (RCCSD(T); RCCSD/cc-pVTZ)</td>
<td>-0.177</td>
<td>-0.317</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}}^{\text{max}} = (E_{\text{CBS}} + \Delta E_{(1)})$</td>
<td>12.972</td>
<td>14.221</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$E_{\text{best}}^{\text{max}} = (E_{\text{CBS}} + \Delta E_{(2)})$</td>
<td>12.946</td>
<td>14.209</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Best estimated AIE ($E_{\text{best average}}$)$^b$</td>
<td>12.96 ± 0.10</td>
<td>14.22 ± 0.17</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta ZPE$ (MP2)</td>
<td>-0.054</td>
<td>-0.047</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Best estimated AIE$_0$ (included ZPE correction)</td>
<td>12.91 ± 0.10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Photoelectron spectrum, this work</td>
<td>13.11 ± 0.05</td>
<td>14.18 ± 0.05</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Table 6.1: Computed first AIEs and VIEs (eV) of the (18a)$^{13}$ ionisation of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ obtained at different levels of calculations.

$^a$ Number of contracted basis functions.

$^b$ The uncertainties are estimated as the differences between the best estimated values and the RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ values.

The best estimated AIE to the $C_3s$ structure of the cation is (12.96 ± 0.10) eV (see footnote b of Table 6.1 for the estimated uncertainties). This includes contributions from extrapolation to the complete basis set limit (CBS in Table 6.1; employing the
RCCSD/cc-pVTZ and RCCSD/cc-pVQZ values) and triple excitations in the RCCSD(T) calculations, assuming that these contributions are additive. Including correction for zero-point energies of the two states (\(\Delta ZPE\)), the AIE_0 is \((12.91 \pm 0.10)\) eV. This value is probably an upper limit, as the C_1 structure of the cation has a lower energy than the C_s structure at different levels of calculation as discussed. The AIE to the lower energy C_1 structure of the cation computed at the RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** level is 12.406 eV. This value is the computed AIE value to the C_1 structure of the cation at the highest level carried out in the present study, and can be compared to a value of 12.686 eV to the C_s structure obtained at the same level of calculation. If the same magnitudes of the various corrections (CBS and triple excitations; see Table 6.1) to the AIE value to the C_s structure are assumed for the C_1 structure, the best AIE_0 value to the C_1 structure is estimated to be 12.68 eV. Including zero-point energy corrections, the best AIE_0 value to the C_1 structure of the cation is 12.63 eV. Combining this AIE_0 value with the best \(\Delta H_{298K}^0(CF_3CHFCF_3)\) value of \((-370.6 \pm 2.3)\) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) obtained previously [10], \(\Delta H_{298K}^0(CF_3CHFCF_3^+)\) has a value of \((-79.3 \pm 4.6)\) kcal.mol\(^{-1}\) (assuming an uncertainty of 0.10 eV associated with the AIE_0 value used).

Comparing theory with experiment, the onset of the first band observed in the experimental PE spectrum of CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\) has a measured ionisation energy (IE) of \((13.11 \pm 0.05)\) eV, which is larger than the best estimated AIE_0 value of 12.63 eV to the C_1 structure of the cation by 0.48 eV. Nevertheless, since the computed geometry change upon ionisation, whether to the C_s or C_1 structure of the cation, is quite large (significant changes in the C-C bond lengths occur), the Franck-Condon factors in the AIE_0 region are expected to be small. Consequently, it is not surprising that the AIE position is not observable in the experimental PE spectrum, and the observed band onset of the first PE band has a higher IE than the true AIE_0. The best estimated VIE value is \((14.22 \pm 0.17)\) eV, in good agreement with the observed band maximum of \((14.18 \pm 0.05)\) eV. Nevertheless, computed higher VIEs (in Table 6.2) suggest that the first band in the observed photoelectron spectrum consists of two ionisations. Regarding the vibrational structure of the first photoelectron band of CF\(_3\)CHFCF\(_3\), the computed geometry change upon ionisation whether to the C_s or C_1 structure of the cation is mainly in the two CC bond lengths. In this connection, vibrational modes of the cation involving CC stretches are expected to be excited upon ionisation. In addition, as
mentioned above, computed VIE values for the second one-electron ionisation suggest that the observed first PE band also includes this ionisation. In view of the above considerations, it is not surprising that the observed first PE band does not exhibit any resolvable vibrational structure because it consists of two overlapping ionisations with their associated vibrational structures.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>(m.o.)</th>
<th>VIE</th>
<th>E\textsubscript{ex}\textsuperscript{b}</th>
<th>VIE\textsuperscript{d}</th>
<th>6-31G\textsuperscript{**}</th>
<th>6-31++G\textsuperscript{**}</th>
<th>6-311++G\textsuperscript{**}</th>
<th>Aug-cc-pVDZ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>18a'</td>
<td>15.83</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>14.22\textsuperscript{a}</td>
<td>13.5</td>
<td>13.95</td>
<td>14.08</td>
<td>13.91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17a'</td>
<td>18.368</td>
<td>0.983</td>
<td>15.2</td>
<td>15.18</td>
<td>15.54</td>
<td>15.65</td>
<td>15.56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22a'</td>
<td>18.529</td>
<td>1.133</td>
<td>15.35</td>
<td>15.34</td>
<td>15.71</td>
<td>15.81</td>
<td>15.73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16a'</td>
<td>18.615</td>
<td>1.497</td>
<td>15.72</td>
<td>15.49</td>
<td>15.86</td>
<td>15.97</td>
<td>15.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15a'</td>
<td>18.748</td>
<td>1.54</td>
<td>15.76</td>
<td>15.66</td>
<td>16.02</td>
<td>16.13</td>
<td>16.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21a'</td>
<td>18.903</td>
<td>1.828</td>
<td>16.05</td>
<td>15.9</td>
<td>16.27</td>
<td>16.37</td>
<td>16.29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20a'</td>
<td>19.018</td>
<td>1.981</td>
<td>16.2</td>
<td>15.04</td>
<td>16.43</td>
<td>16.53</td>
<td>16.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14a'</td>
<td>19.51</td>
<td>2.604</td>
<td>16.82</td>
<td>16.29</td>
<td>16.67</td>
<td>16.78</td>
<td>16.68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13a'</td>
<td>19.92</td>
<td>2.72</td>
<td>16.94</td>
<td>16.81</td>
<td>17.2</td>
<td>17.29</td>
<td>17.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12a'</td>
<td>2.942</td>
<td>17.16</td>
<td>16.98</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17a'</td>
<td>3.029</td>
<td>17.25</td>
<td>17.12</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18a'</td>
<td>3.142</td>
<td>17.36</td>
<td>17.04</td>
<td>17.42</td>
<td>17.51</td>
<td>17.42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16a'</td>
<td>4.632</td>
<td>18.85</td>
<td>18.42</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15a'</td>
<td>5.635</td>
<td>19.85</td>
<td>19.46</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11a'</td>
<td>5.991</td>
<td>20.21</td>
<td>20.11</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10a'</td>
<td>6.23</td>
<td>20.45</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14a'</td>
<td>6.67</td>
<td>20.89</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13a'</td>
<td>6.803</td>
<td>21.02</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9a'</td>
<td>6.957</td>
<td>21.18</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 6.2: Computed VIEs (eV) to, and excitation energies (E\textsubscript{ex}) of, low-lying cationic states of CF\textsubscript{3}CHFCF\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{+} obtained from Hartree-Fock (using the Koopmans' Theorem), time-dependent (TD) density functional theory (using the B3LYP functional) and IP-EOM-CCSD calculations using different basis sets.

\textsuperscript{a} VIEs estimated by the Koopmans' Theorem (KT); negative computed orbital energies from HF/6-311++G(2d,2p) calculation of CF\textsubscript{3}CHFCF\textsubscript{3} at its MP2/6-311++G(2d,2p) optimised geometry.

\textsuperscript{b} The computed excitation energies (E\textsubscript{ex}) of low-lying cationic states of CF\textsubscript{3}CHFCF\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{+} are from time dependent (TD) DFT calculations, using the B3LYP functional and the 6-311++G(2d,2p) basis set, at the MP2/6-311++G(2d,2p) optimised geometry of CF\textsubscript{3}CHFCF\textsubscript{3}.

\textsuperscript{c} Computed VIEs to low-lying cationic states of CF\textsubscript{3}CHFCF\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{+} obtained from IP-EOM-CCSD calculations using different basis sets (the total numbers of contracted basis functions in these basis sets are 155, 196, 227 and 239, respectively) at the MP2/6-31++G\textsuperscript{**} optimised geometry of the neutral molecule.

\textsuperscript{d} VIEs to the excited states of the cation were estimated by employing the best estimated first VIE from Table 6.1 to the ground cationic state and the corresponding computed DFT-TD excitation energies.
The computed higher VIE values obtained at different levels of calculation are summarised in Table 6.2. The highest level of calculation used for the higher VIEs is the IP-EOM-CCSD method. It is clear that the VIE values obtained by Koopmans’ Theorem with the computed Hartree-Fock orbital energies (HF-KT) are too high, when compared with corresponding computed IP-EOM-CCSD values and experimental values. The VIE values obtained using computed time-dependent DFT excitation energies of the cation (using the B3LYP functional; TD-B3LYP) and the best estimated first VIE (from Table 6.1), agree with corresponding computed IP-EOM-CCSD/aug-cc-pVDZ values to within 0.4 eV. However, when they are compared in the bar diagrams shown in Figure 6.3, it can be seen that the “patterns” are quite different. Specifically, the computed IP-EOM-CCSD VIEs form distinct “groups”, which agree very well with the experimental photoelectron spectrum (see Figure 6.1).

![Figure 6.3: Comparison of computed VIEs of CF₃CHFCF₃ obtained with the IP-EOM-CCSD method using different basis sets and with the B3LYP calculations (lowest panel).](image)

However, the computed TD-B3LYP VIEs do not form any clear groupings, as they are rather evenly spread out, and do not agree very well with experiment (see Figure 6.3). Regarding the IP-EOM-CCSD(T) values obtained using different basis sets, the 6-31G** values are too low, while those of the other three larger basis sets have similar
values. For the first VIE, the IP-EOM-CCSD values of \( ca. 14.0 \) eV obtained with the larger basis sets are slightly smaller than the best estimated value of 14.22 eV given above. From the comparison between theory and experiment as shown in Figure 6.1, it can be seen that if the computed IP-EOM-CCSD/aug-cc-pVDZ VIEs are all shifted to slightly higher IEs (by \( ca. 0.3 \) eV), the agreement between the computed IP-EOM-CCSD VIEs and the experimental PE spectrum will be even better than that shown in Figure 6.1. In any case, the “pattern” of the computed IP-EOM-CCSD VIE values matches very well with the relative intensities of PE bands in the experimental spectrum. In this connection, it is clear that the \((23a')^-\) ionisation with a computed IP-EOM-CCSD VIE of \( ca. 14.5 \) eV (see Table 6.2) contributes also to the first observed PE band (see Figure 6.1).

6.3.2.2 \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2 \) and its Cation

The optimised structures of both \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2 \) and its cation in their ground electronic states have \( C_s \) symmetry [26, 27]. The computed geometry change upon ionisation of \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2 \) to the \( \tilde{X}^2A'' \) state of the cation lies mainly in the CF-CF$_2$ bond length, which increases from computed values of 1.337 and 1.334 Å in the neutral molecule to 1.423 and 1.425 Å in the cation at the MP2/6-31+G** and B3LYP/6-31++G** levels of calculation respectively. The ionisation to the \( \tilde{X}^2A'' \) state of \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2^+ \) corresponds to removal of an electron from the 10a" molecular orbital, which is essentially a \( \pi \)-bonding orbital localised to the C=C double bond in the \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2 \) molecule [26]. The computed spin density of the unpaired electron in the ionic state lies mainly on the central C (0.73 and 0.51 at the HF and B3LYP levels respectively, and 0.26 and 0.27 on the terminal C of the CF$_2$ group). The computed harmonic vibrational frequency of the C=C stretching mode of neutral \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2 \) has values of 1851 and 1836 cm$^{-1}$ from MP2 and B3LYP calculations, respectively (which can be compared with 1797 cm$^{-1}$ measured for the C=C stretching mode in the infrared spectrum [22]) while that of the cation has computed values of 1702 and 1631 cm$^{-1}$. These computed harmonic vibrational frequencies of the cation agree reasonably well with the experimental $\omega_C$ value of \( (1640 \pm 30) \) cm$^{-1}$ measured in the first photoelectron band of \( \text{CF}_3\text{CF}=\text{CF}_2 \). The computed first AIEs and VIEs obtained at different levels of calculation are summarised in Table 6.3, and the computed VIEs obtained from IP-EOM-CCSD calculations are tabulated in Table 6.4.
Methods & AIE & VIE & Nb
\hline
B3LYP/6-31++G** & 10.5 & 11.07 & 171
MP2/6-31+**G** & 10.52 & 11.13 & 171
IP-EOM-CCSD/aug-cc-pVDZ//MP2/6-31++G** & & & 11.19 & 207
IP-EOM-CCSD/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** & & & 11.28 & 270
RCCSD/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 10.334 & 11.123 & 270
RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 10.495 & 11.266 & 414
RCCSD/cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 10.578 & 11.398 & 495
RCCSD(T)/cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** & & & 10.495 & 11.266
RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G** & 10.543 & 11.251 & 414
RCCSD/cc-pVTZ,cc-pVQZ;1/X3 & & & 10.578 & 11.398
ΔE_{T1}(RCCSD(T); RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ) & 0.048 & -0.015 & 270
ΔE_{T2}(RCCSD(T); RCCSD/cc-pVTZ) & 0.021 & -0.037 & 414
ΔE_{best}^{0} = (E_{CBS} + ΔE_{aug1} + ΔE_{T2}) & 10.626 & 11.383 & 495
ΔE_{best}^{max} = (E_{CBS} + ΔE_{aug2} + ΔE_{T2}) & 10.599 & 11.361 & 414
Best estimated AIE (E_{best} average)b & 10.61 ± 0.07 & 11.37 ± 0.12 & 270
ΔZPE (MP2) & 0.02 & & & 270
Best estimated AIE0 (included ZPE correction) & 10.63 ± 0.07 & & & 270
He(I) photoelectron spectrum; this work & 10.63 ± 0.02 & 11.02 ± 0.02 & 270
\hline
\textbf{Table 6.3: Computed first AIEs and VIEs (eV) of the (10a") ionisation of CF3CF=CF2 obtained at different levels of calculations.}

\textsuperscript{a} Number of contracted basis functions.
\textsuperscript{b} The uncertainties are estimated as the differences between the best estimated values and the RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ values.

\begin{tabular}{c c c c}
(m.o.) & Aug-cc-pVDZ & cc-pVTZ & Expt. PE spectrum (this work) \\
\hline
10 a" & 11.19 & 11.28 & 11.02 ± 0.02 \\
26a' & 14.60 & 14.70 & 14.61 ± 0.04 \\
9a" & 15.49 & 15.62 & 15.57 ± 0.05 \\
25a' & 15.89 & 16.00 & 15.88 ± 0.04 \\
8a" & 15.97 & 16.08 & & \\
24a' & 16.52 & 16.63 & & \\
23a' & 16.77 & 16.86 & & \\
7a" & 16.93 & 17.02 & & \\
6a" & 16.99 & 17.11 & & \\
22a' & 17.14 & 17.24 & 16.91 ± 0.05 \\
21a' & 17.23 & 17.32 & & \\
5a" & 17.55 & 17.63 & & \\
4a" & 19.23 & 19.32 & & \\
20a' & 19.53 & 19.56 & & \\
\hline
\textbf{Table 6.4: Computed vertical ionisation energies (eV) to low-lying cationic states of CF3CF=CF2 obtained from IP-EOM-CCSD calculations using two different basis sets.}

As can be seen in Table 6.3, the best estimated AIE\textsubscript{0} was obtained as (10.63 ± 0.07) eV in good agreement with the experimental value of (10.63 ± 0.02) eV measured in this work. Similarly the best computed VIE is (11.37 ± 0.12) eV which compares reasonably well with the experimental value of (11.02 ± 0.02) eV shown in Table 6.3.
6.3.2.3 CF$_3$CHF and its Cation

As reaction (6.2), to give CF$_3$CHF + CF$_3$, was expected from the computational work of Peterson and Francisco [6] to be a possible decomposition channel, it was decided to estimate the AIE and VIE of CF$_3$CHF to aid the analysis of the experimental pyrolysis spectra. Although the photoelectron spectrum of CF$_3$ has not been recorded, its first band is expected to be broad with an AIE (9.05 ± 0.01) eV and a VIE of (10.86 ± 0.01) eV [28-32] and hence for this radical no ab initio calculations of AIE and VIE values were necessary. UHF/6-31G* and MP2/6-31G* calculations have been carried out previously on the CF$_3$CHF radical [6, 33]. However, to our knowledge, the CF$_3$CHF$^+$ cation has not been investigated before by ab initio calculations. In addition to the $\tilde{X}^2\text{A}$ state of CF$_3$CHF, the lowest singlet and triplet states of CF$_3$CHF$^+$ have been investigated. Geometry optimisation and harmonic frequency calculations at both the MP2/6-31++G** and B3LYP/6-31++G** level gave a C$_s$ structure for the $\tilde{X}^1\text{A}'$ state of CF$_3$CHF$^+$, while the $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ state has a C$_1$ structure. The computed geometry changes upon ionisation from the $\tilde{X}^2\text{A}$ state of CF$_3$CHF to the $\tilde{X}^1\text{A}'$ and $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ states of the cation involve mainly increases of the r$_a$(CC) bond lengths (from 1.480 to 1.546 and 1.958 Å, respectively) and changes of the orientations of the F atoms in the CF$_2$ group (i.e. the FCC and FCCF angles). The vibrational frequency of the CC stretching mode of the $\tilde{X}^2\text{A}$ of CF$_3$CHF has computed harmonic values of 868 (MP2) and 854 (B3LYP) cm$^{-1}$. However, for the $\tilde{X}^1\text{A}'$ state of CF$_3$CHF$^+$, there are two a' modes with computed harmonic frequencies of 1191 and 869 cm$^{-1}$ (MP2), which involve CC stretching. Similarly, for the $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ state of the cation, CC stretching is involved in two vibrational modes with computed harmonic frequencies of 733 and 979 cm$^{-1}$ (MP2).

Computed AIE and VIE values to the $\tilde{X}^1\text{A}'$ and $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ states of CF$_3$CHF$^+$ obtained at different levels of calculations are summarised in Table 6.5. As restricted-spin open-shell Hartree-Fock (ROHF) calculations carried out on the $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ of CF$_3$CHF$^+$ at the optimised geometry of the neutral molecule faced SCF convergence problems, VIE values to the $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ state at the RCCSD(T) level could not be obtained. However, IE values could be obtained when the RCCSD(T) calculations were carried out at the optimised geometry of the $\tilde{a}^3\text{A}$ state. In addition, the perturbative triple excitations in the RCCSD(T) calculation employing the aug-cc-pVQZ basis set could not be completed with the computing resources available. Nevertheless, CBS values (CBS$_1$ in
Table 6.5) using RCCSD(T) results, which employed the aug-cc-pVDZ and aug-cc-pVTZ basis sets were obtained.

| Methods                                      | X1A' | a3A | Nb
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.83</td>
<td>10.56</td>
<td>12.69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.62</td>
<td>10.53</td>
<td>12.81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVDZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.619</td>
<td>10.549</td>
<td>12.787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.6</td>
<td>10.668</td>
<td>12.763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVQZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td></td>
<td>10.719</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVDZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.58</td>
<td>10.444</td>
<td>12.732</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>9.571</td>
<td>10.562</td>
<td>12.719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS1[1/X1;RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVDZ,aug-cc-pVTZ]</td>
<td>9.568(4)</td>
<td>10.612(50)</td>
<td>12.714(5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS2<a href="T">1/X1;RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ,aug-cc-pVQZ</a></td>
<td>10.756(37)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS2 + (T)</td>
<td>-0.1057</td>
<td>10.650(37)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔZPE (MP2)</td>
<td>0.0029</td>
<td>-0.0424</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AIE0 = CBS1 + ΔZPE</td>
<td>9.571(4)</td>
<td>12.672(5)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The total number of contracted basis functions used in the calculation.

In addition, for the VIE to the X1A' state, CBS values (CBS2 in Table 6.5) using RCCSD results, which employed the aug-cc-pVTZ and aug-cc-pVQZ basis sets have been obtained. Including a correction for perturbative triple excitations ((T) in Table 6.5), based on the RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ results, it is seen that the CBS2 + (T) value of (10.650 ± 0.037) eV agrees with the CBS1 value of (10.612 ± 0.050) eV to within the estimated uncertainties. Including zero-point energy corrections (ΔZPE), the recommended first and second AIE0 values to the X1A' and a3A states are 9.571 and 12.672 eV respectively. In relation to the identification of the CF3CHF radical in a photoelectron spectrum, computed ab initio results obtained in the present investigation suggest that the first photoelectron band has an onset at 9.57 eV and a band maximum at ca. 10.63 eV. Due to the large change in the predicted equilibrium geometry upon ionisation from the X2A state of the neutral molecule (with C₁ symmetry) to the X1A' of the cation (with C₃ symmetry), the first photoelectron band is expected to be broad with complex vibrational structure. In addition, it is anticipated that higher IE bands are well separated from the first band, with the second photoelectron band corresponding to ionisation to the a3A state starting at an IE of approximately 12.67 eV.
6.3.2.4 CF$_3$CF and its Cation

Decomposition of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ to give CF$_3$CF + CF$_3$H is another possible reaction channel (this is reaction 11 of Peterson and Francisco [6]). As mentioned previously, the photoelectron spectrum of CF$_3$H was recorded in this work. However, the photoelectron spectrum of CF$_3$CF is not available, so it was decided to compute AIE and VIE values to assist band assignment in the pyrolysis spectra. Previous ab initio calculations on CF$_3$CF focused mainly on the singlet – triplet gap of the carbene [34-36]. These calculations gave a singlet ground state for CF$_3$CF and the lowest triplet state was computed to be over 10 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ higher in energy. However, no ab initio calculations have been carried out on the cation previously. Geometry optimisation and harmonic frequency calculations have been carried out in this work using MP2/6-31++G** and B3LYP/6-31++G** on the lowest singlet and triplet states of CF$_3$CF and the lowest doublet state of CF$_3$CF$^+$. The lowest triplet state of the neutral molecule is the $\tilde{\alpha}$ $^3$A$^\text{g}$ state which has a Cs structure at both the MP2 and B3LYP levels. At the MP2 level, the $\tilde{\chi}^1$A state has a C$_1$ structure, though a Cs saddle point (with a small computed a" imaginary frequency of 29.9i cm$^{-1}$) is only 13.6 cm$^{-1}$ higher in energy. At the B3LYP level, there is also a similar Cs saddle point, but geometry optimisation with C$_1$ symmetry failed to converge after over 50 points. This is the case even when analytical second derivatives were computed explicitly at every point in the search, indicating that the B3LYP method is inadequate for the lowest singlet state of CF$_3$CF. The computed singlet-triplet separations at the MP2 and B3LYP levels (with respect to the Cs saddle point) are 10.0 and 12.6 kcal.mol$^{-1}$, respectively, in good agreement with results of previous calculations. The $\tilde{\chi}^2$A state of CF$_3$CF$^+$ has a C$_1$ structure at both the MP2 and B3LYP levels. The computed r$_0$(CC) bond length in the ionic state is longer than that in the $\tilde{\chi}^1$A state of the neutral molecule. At the MP2 level these bond lengths are 1.622 Å and 1.559 Å respectively. There are two vibrational modes with computed harmonic frequencies of 1330 and 683 cm$^{-1}$ of the neutral, which involve CC stretching, and for the cation, these vibrations have computed harmonic vibrational frequencies of 788 and 513 cm$^{-1}$.

Computed first AIE and VIE values obtained at different levels of calculation are summarised in Table 6.6. The best estimated first AIE$_0$ value (CBS + ΔZPE in Table 6.6) and VIE value are (10.55 ± 0.02) and (11.49 ± 0.05) eV, respectively.
Table 6.6: Computed first AIEs and VIEs (eV) to the $\tilde{X}^2A$ state of CF$_3$CF$^+$ obtained at different levels of calculation.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Method</th>
<th>AIE</th>
<th>VIE</th>
<th>Nb$^a$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>10.52$^b$</td>
<td></td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-31+G**</td>
<td>10.32</td>
<td>11.08</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IP-EOM-CCSD/aug-cc-pVDZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td></td>
<td>11.4</td>
<td>138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IP-EOM-CCSD/cc-pVTZ/MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td></td>
<td>11.51</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>10.472</td>
<td>11.455</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>10.498</td>
<td>11.517</td>
<td>480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>10.486</td>
<td>11.38</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVQZ//MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>10.516</td>
<td>11.444</td>
<td>480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS[1/X$^3$:RCCSD(T)/aug-cc-pVTZ;aug-cc-pVQZ]</td>
<td>10.538 ± 0.022</td>
<td>11.491 ± 0.047</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Delta$ZPE(MP2)</td>
<td>0.012</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CBS + $\Delta$ZPE(MP2)</td>
<td>10.55 ± 0.02</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ The total number of contracted basis functions used in the calculation.

$^b$ With respect to the C$_s$ saddle point of CF$_2$CF; as with the B3LYP method, no true minimum of C$_1$ symmetry was obtained.

These values suggest that the first photoelectron band of CF$_3$CF is broad with a width of over 1 eV. When the best estimated first AIE$_0$ value of CF$_3$CF obtained in the present study is compared with the most reliable first AIE$_0$ value of CF$_2$ obtained recently from threshold photoelectron spectroscopy, (11.362 ± 0.005) eV [37], it can be seen that the CF$_3$ substituent has lowered the first AIE$_0$ of the fluorocarbene by ca. 0.8 eV, indicating that CF$_3$ is significantly less electron withdrawing than F. This is in line with the smaller group electronegativity of CF$_3$ (2.68) than F (4.00) [38, 39]. Computed VIE values to low-lying electronic states of CF$_3$CF$^+$ obtained at different levels of calculation are tabulated in Table 6.7.

Table 6.7: Computed vertical ionisation energies (in eV) to low-lying cationic states of CF$_3$CF$^+$ obtained via Koopmans’ Theorem (at the Hartree-Fock level; HF-KT), and from IP-EOM-CCSD calculations using two different basis sets at the MP2/6-31++G** geometry of the $\tilde{X}^2A$ state of CF$_3$CF$^+$.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>(m.o.)$^1$</th>
<th>HF-KT/ aug-cc-pVDZ</th>
<th>IP-EOM-CCSD/ aug-cc-pVDZ</th>
<th>IP-EOM-CCSD/ cc-pVTZ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>24a</td>
<td>12.48</td>
<td>11.4</td>
<td>11.51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23a</td>
<td>17.68</td>
<td>15.67</td>
<td>15.78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22a</td>
<td>18.43</td>
<td>15.7</td>
<td>15.82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21a</td>
<td>18.79</td>
<td>16.28</td>
<td>16.39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20a</td>
<td>18.83</td>
<td>16.31</td>
<td>16.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19a</td>
<td>19.79</td>
<td>17.21</td>
<td>17.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18a</td>
<td>19.99</td>
<td>17.37</td>
<td>17.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17a</td>
<td>20.6</td>
<td>18.2</td>
<td>18.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16a</td>
<td>21.01</td>
<td>18.58</td>
<td>18.68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15a</td>
<td>23.09</td>
<td>20.73</td>
<td>20.77</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
These values suggest that the first photoelectron band of CF₃CF is separated from the higher ionisation energy bands by ca. 4 eV. It should also be noted that C₂F₄ is expected to lie 18.0 kcal mol⁻¹ lower in energy than CF₃CF, from the energy of the isomerisation reaction determined by DiFelice and Ritter [40] by evaluation of available heats of formation, and calculations of forward and reverse rate coefficients and comparison with experimental evidence.

6.3.3 Thermal Decomposition Studies of CF₃CHFCF₃

Photoelectron spectra were recorded for flowing CF₃CHFCF₃ heavily diluted in argon in the temperature range 600-2000 °C. Typical spectra recorded at furnace temperatures of 1300 and 1800 °C are shown in Figure 6.4. Normalised product band intensities, as well as the normalised intensity of the first band of CF₃CHFCF₃, plotted as function of temperature are shown in Figure 6.5. Two of the favoured reactions from the computational study of Peterson and Francisco [6] are reactions (6.1) and (6.2). Reaction (6.2) was also suggested as the major initiation reaction in a shock tube study by Hynes et al. [1]. Clear evidence was obtained in the present work for reaction (6.1) as HF and CF₃CF=CF₂ were observed at pyrolysis temperatures in the region 600-1000 °C as initial decomposition products. However, no evidence was obtained for the products of reaction (6.2), CF₃CHF and CF₃ with expected first band VIE (and AIE) values of 10.63 (9.57) eV and 10.86 (9.05) eV respectively (see the previous section).

Also, no evidence of C₂F₆, obtained from recombination of two CF₃ radicals, was obtained although there was evidence for production of CF₃H. In separate experiments in which the photoelectron spectra of C₂F₆ and CF₃H were recorded and calibrated, the VIEs of the first bands of these molecules were measured as (14.61 ± 0.01) eV and (14.78 ± 0.01) eV respectively in agreement with previous measurements [41-45]. Also, no evidence was obtained for production of CF₃CF, expected first AIE and VIE (10.55 ± 0.02) and (11.49 ± 0.05) eV respectively, although production of C₂F₄ was clearly observed. The molecules observed on pyrolysis of CF₃CHFCF₃, diluted in argon, are HF, CF₃CF=CF₂ (C₃F₆), C₂F₄, CF₂ and CF₃H. C₃F₆ could be readily identified as it has a characteristic first band in the 10.5-12.0 eV ionisation energy region (see Figure 6.2). HF is also readily observed as it has a sharp first band at 16.04 eV VIE [46]. C₂F₄ and CF₂ were also straightforward to identify as these show broad first bands at VIEs of 10.54 and 12.24 eV respectively [32, 37, 47-49]. The first band of CF₃H at 14.78 eV
could also be seen in pyrolysis spectra, and it was observed more clearly when contributions of $C_3F_6$ and $CF_3CHFCF_3$ had been subtracted off.

Figure 6.4: PE spectra recorded from the thermal decomposition of $CF_3CHFCF_3$ at furnace temperatures of A, 1300 °C and B, 1800 °C.
The procedure used for analysis of the pyrolysis spectra involved first normalising the intensity of the first band in the photoelectron spectrum of \( \text{C}_3\text{F}_6 \) to the intensity of the corresponding band observed in the pyrolysis spectrum and then subtracting off its overall contribution. This procedure was then repeated for the first band of \( \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3 \) to subtract off the contributions of \( \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3 \) from the spectra. Then the calibrated spectrum of \( \text{CF}_3\text{H} \) was used to remove its contributions from the pyrolysis spectra by matching the intensity of the first PE band to the corresponding band seen in a pyrolysis spectrum. Estimating the observed photoelectron band intensities in this way at different furnace temperatures allowed a plot to be made of the normalised band intensities as a function of temperature. This is shown in Figure 6.5.

It should also be noted that in Figures 6.4A and 6.4B, in the ionisation energy region above 16.0 eV, as well as the bands shown from \( \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3, \text{C}_3\text{F}_6, \text{CF}_3\text{H} \) and HF, higher bands of \( \text{CF}_2 \) and \( \text{C}_2\text{F}_4 \) [47, 49] also contribute.

![Figure 6.5: Normalised experimental band intensities of \( \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3 \) and observed thermal decomposition products plotted as a function of temperature](image)

It is apparent from Figure 6.5 that \( \text{CF}_3\text{CHFCF}_3 \) undergoes initial thermal decomposition at approximately 600 °C and is fully decomposed by 2000 °C. \( \text{C}_3\text{F}_6 \) and HF are the first decomposition products observed in the region 600-900 °C. HF and \( \text{C}_3\text{F}_6 \) exhibit the
same temperature dependence until 1400 °C where \( C_3F_6 \) maximises and then, at higher temperatures, it decomposes to \( C_2F_4 \) and \( CF_2 \). \( CF_3H \) and \( C_2F_4 \) are observed from approximately 900 °C and in the temperature region 900-1400 °C appear to exhibit the same temperature dependence. \( CF_3H \) reached a plateau at approximately 1600 °C. \( C_2F_4 \) appears to maximise at slightly higher temperatures and then decreases as it is converted into \( CF_2 \). \( CF_2 \) increases steadily from 1200 °C and reaches a plateau at approximately 1850 °C.

On the basis of this evidence, it appears that at the lowest temperatures at which decomposition occurs 600-900 °C, \( C_3F_6 \) and HF are produced by reaction (6.1)

\[
CF_3CHFCF_3 \rightarrow CF_3CF=CF_2 + HF \tag{6.1}
\]

This is then followed by reaction (6.3)

\[
CF_3CHFCF_3 \rightarrow C_2F_4 + CF_3H \tag{6.3}
\]

and decomposition of \( C_3F_6 \) to give \( C_2F_4 \) and \( CF_2 \) via reaction (6.4)

\[
CF_3CF=CF_2 \rightarrow C_2F_4 + CF_2 \tag{6.4}
\]

Heats of reactions for (6.1), (6.3) and (6.4) are \( \Delta H_f^{298K} = (30.1 \pm 3.6) \) kcal.mol\(^{-1} \), \( \Delta H_f^{298K} = (43.8 \pm 3.6) \) kcal.mol\(^{-1} \) and \( \Delta H_f^{298K} = (69.0 \pm 2.2) \) kcal.mol\(^{-1} \) respectively. Reaction (6.3) appears to be more important than reaction (6.4) in the temperature range 900-1400 °C whereas reaction (6.4) is more important above 1400 °C. Above 1700 °C, \( C_2F_4 \) produced by both reactions (6.3) and (6.4) is decomposed to \( CF_2 \). Use of the most reliable \( \Delta H_f^{298K} \) values leads to the reaction enthalpies shown above. In deriving these values, the heat of formation of \( CF_3 CHFCF_3 \), obtained from a previous computational study \( \Delta H_f^{298K} = (-370.6 \pm 2.3) \) kcal.mol\(^{-1} \) [10] and the heat of formation of \( CF_3CF=CF_2 \) of \( \Delta H_f^{298K} = (-275.3 \pm 1.1) \) kcal.mol\(^{-1} \) [50, 51] were used. The heats of formation of HF, \( CF_2 \), \( C_2F_4 \) and \( CF_3H \) used in these calculations were as used in previous earlier work (see Chapter 5).

In reference [6], a computational study of the thermal decomposition pathways of \( CF_3CHFCF_3 \) has been made. The enthalpies of twelve possible decomposition reactions have been calculated and the energy barriers for the five least endothermic reactions
have been evaluated. The enthalpies and energy barriers obtained for these five reactions are summarised in Table 6.8.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction No; this work</th>
<th>Reaction No; Ref.[6]</th>
<th>Products</th>
<th>Reaction enthalpy $\Delta H_{f,298K}$ kcal.mol$^{-1}$</th>
<th>Forward barrier height (0 K) kcal.mol$^{-1}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>1A</td>
<td>CF$_3$CHF + CF$_3$</td>
<td>92.3</td>
<td>not calculated</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>CF$_3$CH + CF$_4$</td>
<td>90.2</td>
<td>127.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>CF$_3$CF + CF$_3$H</td>
<td>81.9</td>
<td>97.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>CF$_3$CF$_3$ + CHF</td>
<td>79.2</td>
<td>127.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>CF$_3$CF$_2$H + CF$_2$</td>
<td>58.1</td>
<td>118.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>CF$_3$CF=CF$_2$ + HF</td>
<td>34.8</td>
<td>79.5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 6.8:** Reaction enthalpies and forward barrier heights computed using ab initio methods from the work of Peterson and Francisco [6]. For the primary decomposition paths of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$.

As can be seen, the least endothermic reaction with the smallest activation energy is the dominant reaction observed in the present work. No evidence for the other reactions was obtained. For example, no evidence was obtained for production of CF$_3$CF$_2$H + CF$_2$, the next reaction expected on energetic grounds to participate. The photoelectron spectrum of CF$_3$CF$_2$H is well established from previous work (see Chapter 5), but no CF$_3$CF$_2$H was seen in the pyrolysis spectra. Also, there was no evidence of production of CF$_3$CF + CF$_3$H ($\Delta H_{r,0K}^0$ calculated in reference [6] as 81.9 kcal.mol$^{-1}$). However, production of C$_2$F$_4$ + CF$_3$H was observed. Using the energy of the reaction for conversion of C$_2$F$_4$ into CF$_3$CF of 18.0 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ [40], the $\Delta H_{r,0K}^0$ value for production of C$_2$F$_4$ + CF$_3$H can be calculated as 63.9 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ i.e. the 81.9 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ value of ref.[6] reduced by 18.0 kcal.mol$^{-1}$, which compares favourably with the enthalpy of reaction (6.3) of (69.0 ± 2.2) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ evaluated using available heats of formation (see above). Decomposition of CF$_3$CFHCF$_3$ into C$_2$F$_4$ + CF$_3$H rather than into CF$_3$CF + CF$_3$H appears to be dominant under the experimental conditions used.

These studies have monitored the gas-phase products as a function of temperature in a flow system and are therefore valuable in providing information on how CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ decomposes on heating. It should be noted, however, that they provide no information on the mechanism of the decomposition reactions. For example, some decomposition of CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$ on the heated furnace surface or decomposition via a free radical mechanism, involving for example CF$_3$ or CF$_3$CHF, could be taking place although no bands from these radicals were seen in the pyrolysis spectra.
In the earlier study on CF<sub>3</sub>CHF<sub>2</sub>, reported in Chapter 5, it was found that in the temperature range 700-1000 °C, under the conditions used, the dominant decomposition reaction is elimination of HF, as in the case of CF<sub>3</sub>CFHCF<sub>3</sub> i.e.

\[
CF_3CHF_2 \rightarrow C_2F_4 + HF \quad (5.5)
\]

followed by

\[
C_2F_4 \rightarrow 2CF_2 \quad (5.6)
\]

Above 1000 °C, reaction (6.7) occurs

\[
CF_3CHF_2 \rightarrow CF_2 + CF_2H \quad (5.7)
\]

Tests of relative fire suppression efficiencies of a number of HFCs show that the suppression efficiency increases with the number of CF<sub>3</sub> groups in the suppressant, with CF<sub>3</sub>CHFCF<sub>3</sub> being more efficient that CF<sub>3</sub>CHF<sub>2</sub> [53]. HFCs suppress flames by two main mechanisms [54], physical cooling of the flame and associated solid surfaces, and chemical reaction of the suppressant and its decomposition products with key flame propagating reactive intermediates such as H, O, and OH. The molar specific heat capacity of CF<sub>3</sub>CFHCF<sub>3</sub> is greater than that of CF<sub>3</sub>CHF<sub>2</sub> [53] and therefore CF<sub>3</sub>CHFCF<sub>3</sub> will be more effective at physically cooling a flame than CF<sub>3</sub>CHF<sub>2</sub>.

CF<sub>2</sub> is known to be a key intermediate in reacting with flame intermediates such as H, O and OH [54]. The results of this work indicate that it is produced in significant partial pressures earlier in the pyrolysis at lower temperatures from CF<sub>3</sub>CHF<sub>2</sub> (see Chapter 5) than from CF<sub>3</sub>CHFCF<sub>3</sub>. However, H, O and OH will also react with CF<sub>3</sub>CF=CF<sub>2</sub> and CF<sub>2</sub>=CF<sub>2</sub> produced from decomposition of CF<sub>3</sub>CHFCF<sub>3</sub>, and CF<sub>2</sub>=CF<sub>2</sub> produced from decomposition of CF<sub>3</sub>CHF<sub>2</sub>. As shown in this work, CF<sub>3</sub>CF=CF<sub>2</sub> is produced early in the pyrolysis at relatively low temperatures from CF<sub>3</sub>CHFCF<sub>3</sub>. It is the combined effect of all these reactions, as well as the physical cooling effect, which will determine the efficiency of a fire suppressant in a particular flame. Further studies are clearly needed, involving both experimental work and flame modelling, to establish the relative importance of these and other reactions in a flame.
6.4 Conclusion

The pyrolysis products of CF₃CHFCF₃, diluted in argon at low pressure, have been studied as a function of temperature. The results have been interpreted in terms of two decomposition reactions, reaction (6.1) and (6.3), as well as the reaction CF₃CF=CF₂ → C₂F₄ + CF₂.

The photoelectron spectrum of CF₃CHFCF₃ has been interpreted using state-of-the-art ab initio calculations and the first band has been shown to consist of ionisations from both of the outermost filled molecular orbitals, the 18a'' and 23a' orbitals. Comparison has been made between the threshold photoelectron spectrum and the photoelectron spectrum of CF₃CF=CF₂. The first band in the threshold spectrum is a lot weaker than in the photoelectron spectrum, and the higher energy bands, above 13.5 eV, appear less well resolved in the TPE spectrum. This arises because autoionisation from high-lying Rydberg states, which are parts of a series converging to higher ionisation thresholds, contribute to the intensity in the higher ionisation energy region of the TPE spectrum. This effect has been observed before in two other fluorinated hydrocarbons, CF₃CHF₂ (see Chapter 5) and c-C₅F₈ [52].

The most favoured reaction, thermodynamically, to produce CF₃CF=CF₂ + HF, is found to be the main decomposition reaction at lower temperatures, 600-900 °C. At higher temperatures, 900-1200 °C, the decomposition reaction which gave C₂F₄ + CF₃H was found to become important. No evidence for CF₃CHFCF₃ → CF₃CHF + CF₃, a reaction expected to be important from a shock tube study, performed at much higher pressures, or for CF₃CHFCF₃ → CF₃CF + CF₃H was obtained, although for the latter reaction it is likely that CF₃CF converts into C₂F₄ under the conditions used before photoionisation in the ionisation region of the photoelectron spectrometer. At higher temperatures C₃F₆ decomposes to C₂F₄ + CF₂, and C₂F₄ decomposes to CF₂. Ab initio calculations have been performed of the adiabatic and vertical ionisation energies (VIE) of possible primary pyrolysis products to assist assignment of the photoelectron spectra recorded for heated flowing gas samples. A comparison is made between the threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum and the photoelectron spectrum (PE) of CF₃CF=CF₂.
References


Chapter 7

Study of the Ethene + Ozone Reaction with PES: Measurement of Product Branching Ratios and Atmospheric Implications

The reactions of ozone with alkenes have been the subject of numerous research investigations, largely because of their importance in atmospheric chemistry [1]. They are important in air pollution processes in urban areas and are significant loss processes for both ozone and alkenes in the atmosphere [2-4]. Globally alkenes account for most of the non-methane hydrocarbon emissions in the troposphere. Sources include automobile exhausts, industrial emissions and vegetation.

It is now generally accepted that ozonolysis of alkenes follows the mechanism proposed by Criegee [5, 6]. This involves three main steps [7],

1. Formation of a primary ozonide by addition of ozone to the double bond of the alkene.
2. Decomposition of the primary ozonide into a carbonyl compound and a carbonyl oxide (a Criegee intermediate).
3. A subsequent reaction of the Criegee intermediate with the reagents and products.

Whilst there is considerable experimental support for this mechanism, no Criegee intermediate has so far been observed and studied in the gas-phase with spectroscopic methods, although there is evidence for the presence of a Criegee intermediate in gas-
phase mass spectrometric studies and in infrared matrix isolation experiments [8-10]. In a recent study of the products of the reaction of CH$_3$SOCH$_2$ with O$_2$ with photoionisation mass spectrometry using synchrotron radiation [8], a signal was observed in the m/z = 46 mass channel. By measuring its intensity as a function of photon energy, a photoionisation onset was determined as (10.00 ± 0.02) eV. Supporting evidence was provided from electronic structure calculations that this arises from photoionisation of the Criegee intermediate CH$_2$OO and not its isomer dioxirane [8], which had been observed in earlier studies in the gas-phase by microwave spectroscopy and photoionisation mass spectrometry [11, 12]. In these experiments [11, 12], ozone and ethene were condensed on a surface cooled to liquid nitrogen temperature. The surface was then allowed to warm and the vapour above the solid was sampled by a mass spectrometer and a microwave spectrometer [11, 12]. Also, in matrix isolation infrared studies of ozone reactions with cis-2-butene, cyclopentene and cyclopentadiene, evidence was presented in each case for the formation and identification of a Criegee intermediate, as well as the associated primary ozonide [9, 10].

A number of studies of the ethene-ozone reaction have been made by electronic structure calculations [13-17]. The reaction is found to be highly exoergic with the formation of the primary ozonide calculated to be exothermic by 49 kcal.mol$^{-1}$. Decomposition of the primary ozonide into formaldehyde and the Criegee intermediate is 2 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ endothermic with respect to the primary ozonide (exothermic by 47 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ relative to the reagents) and conversion of the Criegee intermediate into formic acid is calculated to be exothermic by 102 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ [13, 14].

Previous experimental studies of the ethene-ozone reaction include measurement of rate coefficients and branching ratios [18-33]. Product branching ratios have been measured using a number of methods, notably photoionisation mass spectrometry (PIMS) at low pressure [23, 24], and gas-phase and matrix isolation infrared spectroscopy [25-30], and chromatography [31, 32] of the reaction mixture heavily diluted in synthetic air at atmospheric pressure. It is clear from this work that while the rate coefficient has been measured experimentally at room temperature and over a temperature range, the reaction products and product branching ratios have only been partially established. Comparison of the experimental product branching ratios reported in different studies shows only modest agreement, probably because in each study the detection technique
Ethene + Ozone

used is only capable of detecting some but not all of the products. For example, formic acid has been observed in some of the studies and molecular oxygen, a major reaction product, has also been observed previously but there have been no measurements of the product yield [1].

Ultraviolet photoelectron spectroscopy is a method which can in principle be used to detect all reaction products, provided sufficient number densities are present in the photoionisation region. The aim of this work is to use this method to study the products of the ozone-ethene reaction as a function of time. The measured product yields will then be used in a global atmospheric model to estimate the annual global budgets of the observed products from this reaction.

7.1 Experimental

7.1.2 Photoelectron (PE) Spectra Recorded as a Function of Time

PE spectra were recorded for the ozone-ethene reaction at low pressure (~5 torr total pressure) at different reaction times (0-15 s) using a glass flow-tube, operated under laminar flow conditions, attached to the ionisation chamber of a PE spectrometer. The spectrometer used was a 10 cm mean radius hemispherical analyser instrument which uses a HeI photon source (21.22 eV), and has been described previously [34-36]. The ethene-ozone reaction is a slow reaction with a rate coefficient of 1.72x10^{-18} cm^3 molecule^{-1} s^{-1} at 298 K [18]. As a result, a long flow-tube was used (30 m long; id 10 mm; open-ended into the spectrometer), with six equally spaced vacuum tap inlets along its length. During a typical experiment, ozone was passed along the length of the flow-tube and ethene (Aldrich 99.5%) was introduced through one of the equally spaced vacuum taps. In this way, PE spectra could be recorded as a function of mixing distance.

Ozone was made by a silent electric discharge of flowing oxygen and stored on non-indicating silica gel held at -78 °C in a dry-ice/acetone slush bath as described previously [37, 38]. The presence of O_3 on the gel was indicated by a deep blue colouration. In practice, ozone could be stored safely for as long as the slush bath was maintained. The U-tube containing the ozone on the silica gel was connected to the flow tube via a stainless steel needle valve. Initially the needle valve was opened slightly, to
remove residual oxygen from the U-tube. Removal of oxygen was checked by recording spectra at approximately 15 minute intervals. After about 1 hour, the needle valve was opened wider and a spectrum of ozone could be obtained with little or no contribution from oxygen. In a typical experiment, the pure ozone supply was maintained at constant pressure and this was checked at different stages during the experiment and at the end of the experiment. Pressure measurements were made every 5 m along the flow-tube using calibrated baratron pressure transducers. Using these measurements, the flow-rate and flow velocity could be calculated at each reaction mixing distance using the Poiseuille equation. In this way, a plot of PE band intensities of the reagents and products as a function of mixing distance could be converted to a plot of PE band intensities of the reagents and products as a function of reaction time. Calculations were also made of the Reynolds number, using the measured flow-rates, and these were consistent with laminar flow in the flow-tube.

7.2 Photoionisation Cross-Section Measurements

In order to convert plots of relative PE band intensities versus reaction time to plots of partial pressures versus reaction time, it is necessary to determine the photoionisation cross-sections of the reagents, ethene and ozone, and the observed products at the angle of detection of photoelectrons with respect to the unpolarised photon beam (90°) and at the photon energy used (21.22 eV). The method used has been developed from that used earlier to study the DMS + Cl₂ reaction [36, 39].

It involved making up a sample of known partial pressures of the molecule of interest and argon in a 7.3 L bulb in helium to a total pressure of 1 atm. (e.g. a mixture of ethylene (5%) and argon (5%) in helium). The sample was then admitted to a differentially pumped stainless-steel flow-tube, interfaced to a PE spectrometer (with a 20 cm mean radius analyser) at a known flow-rate (typically 100 sccm) using a calibrated mass flow-controller, as described previously [36, 39]. A second calibrated mass flow controller was used to admit the carrier gas (helium) to the flow-tube at a fixed flow-rate (typically 1 slm). PE spectra were then recorded with the objective of measuring the intensity of a selected PE band of the molecule of interest (the band monitored as a function of time in the ethene-ozone experiments; this was usually the first band of the selected molecule) relative to the argon (3p)⁻¹ PE bands. Also, the full PE spectrum of oxygen was recorded twice before sampling and twice after sampling.
These spectra were used in the analysis procedure to correct for any change in the transmission of the spectrometer during the sampling experiments. In most cases, the change in transmission during sampling was found to be small. From the experimental spectra, the area of the selected band of the molecule of interest, including all vibrational components, relative to the area of both spin-orbit components of the argon \((3p)^1\) ionisation was measured. At least ten measurements were made in this way and the average value determined. This ratio was then corrected for the relative partial pressures of the sample and argon in the sample bulb. This is the photoionisation cross-section (PI-CS) on the spectrometer of the selected band of the molecule relative to the argon \((3p)^1\) ionisation. The PI-CS values derived in this way and used in the analysis of the spectra recorded for the ethene-ozone reaction are shown in column 2 of Table 7.1.

However, in order to obtain absolute photoionisation cross-sections from the known photoionisation cross-section of argon, a correction must be made for the transmission of the analyser (this is an electron kinetic energy correction) and for the angular distribution parameters of the selected bands of both the molecule and argon. These values are shown in columns 3 and 4 of Table 7.1 respectively. As can be seen, the electron kinetic energy correction is much bigger than the angular distribution correction.

### Table 7.1: Comparison of photoelectron band Photoionisation Cross-Sections (PI-CS) relative to argon.

The first band of all the molecules has been used in the measurements, unless otherwise stated.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Molecule</th>
<th>PI-CS on the Spectrometer</th>
<th>PI-CS Corrected for e.K.E and Angular Distribution (a)</th>
<th>Literature PI-CS (Mb) (b)</th>
<th>Literature PI-CS relative to argon (c)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Argon</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>37.1 [43]</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethylene</td>
<td>0.49 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.23 ± 0.02</td>
<td>7.2 [44]</td>
<td>0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxygen</td>
<td>0.38 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.20 ± 0.02</td>
<td>7.42 [45,46]</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ozone, 3rd band</td>
<td>0.59 ± 0.10</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.05</td>
<td>12.6 [42]</td>
<td>0.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbon Monoxide</td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.15 ± 0.02</td>
<td>7.0 [47]</td>
<td>0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbon Dioxide</td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.16 ± 0.01</td>
<td>10.28 [48,49]</td>
<td>0.28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetaldehyde</td>
<td>0.63 ± 0.05</td>
<td>0.32 ± 0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formaldehyde</td>
<td>0.32 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.15 ± 0.01</td>
<td>8.47 [50,51]</td>
<td>0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water</td>
<td>0.27 ± 0.07</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.05</td>
<td>6.61 [52]</td>
<td>0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formic Acid</td>
<td>0.80 ± 0.10</td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.02</td>
<td>15.0 [53]</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(a) Photoionisation cross-sections measured relative to argon (this work).
(b) Available literature photoionisation cross-sections (measured in Mb, \(10^{-18}\) cm\(^2\)).
(c) Literature photoionisation cross-sections measured relative to argon at 37.1 Mb [43] and normalised to 1.
(d) Total cross-section at \(h\nu = 16.0\) eV taken as 31 Mb [42]; the cross-section for the third band was obtained by measuring its area relative to the total area (bands 1-3 in the He(I) spectrum).
This method to determine PE band cross-sections relative to argon was used for one of the reactants, ethene, and the products, oxygen, carbon monoxide, carbon dioxide, acetaldehyde, formaldehyde, and water. Formaldehyde was prepared, prior to this procedure, by heating paraformaldehyde to temperatures in excess of 383 K and collecting the gas in a liquid nitrogen trap as described elsewhere [40, 41]. It was then purified by passing it through traps at higher temperatures than 77 K before the argon/formaldehyde sample of known composition was prepared.

Problems were experienced with ozone and formic acid. In the ozone case, this procedure could not be used as it was not possible to make up a sample, mixed with argon, of known concentration and pass it through a mass flow controller without some decomposition into molecular oxygen occurring. In this case, an approximate procedure was used which involved using the measured cross-section of ozone at 16.0 eV photon energy taken from [42] (31.0 Mb; 1 Mb = 10^{-18} \text{ cm}^2). This was assumed to be the measured cross-section of the first three bands of ozone at \( h\nu = 21.22 \text{ eV} \). This is reasonable as the higher PE bands of ozone from one-electron ionisation occur above 16.0 eV [37]. The experimental relative intensities of the first three bands of ozone were then used to give the photoionisation cross-section for the third band at \( h\nu = 21.22 \text{ eV} \).

The electron kinetic energy and angular distribution parameter correction was then made to give the photoionisation cross-section on the spectrometer, relative to argon, of the ozone third band. This is the value shown for ozone in Table 7.1 column 2. It is quoted with a larger error than the other values because of the approximate procedure used. In the case of formic acid, problems were experienced in obtaining reproducible results for mixtures made up with argon in a bulb, because of its relatively high vapour pressure at room temperature and its tendency to condense on the walls. In this case, an alternative, more approximate, procedure was used which involved admitting formic acid and argon into the PE spectrometer via the side of the ionisation chamber, at known partial pressures as measured by an ionisation gauge. The intensity of the first band of formic acid was then measured relative to the \((3p)^{-1}\) bands of argon. This method was felt to be reasonably reliable as the molecular weights of formic acid and argon are similar. However, the error in the formic acid relative cross-section on the spectrometer quoted in Table 7.1, column 2 is higher than the other values because this approximate method was used.
Also shown in Table 7.1, in column 5, are the available literature cross-sections for the relevant bands of the reagents and the observed reaction products at $h\nu = 21.22$ eV [43-53]. Column 6 of Table 7.1 shows the normalised values relative to argon. It can be seen in this table that on comparing column 6 with column 4 (the relative values derived in this work) that reasonably good agreement is obtained, supporting the values used in this work to convert relative PE band intensities into relative molecular partial pressures.

### 7.3 Description of the Global Model Used

Using the results from this study, the Global Chemistry Transport Model CRI-STOCHEM has been used to estimate the mass of products formed in the atmosphere. The CRI-STOCHEM model is described in detail in references [54, 55]. The model used is an updated version of the UK Meteorological Office tropospheric chemistry transport model (STOCHEM) described by Collins et al. [56], with updates reported in detail in the recent paper of Utembe et al. [54]. STOCHEM is a global 3-dimensional Chemical Transport Model (CTM) which uses a Lagrangian approach to advect 50,000 air parcels using a 4th order Runge-Kutta scheme with advection time steps of 3 hours. The transport and radiation models are driven by archived meteorological data, generated by the Met office numerical weather prediction models as analysis fields with a resolution of 1.25° longitude and 0.83° latitude and on 12 vertical levels extending to 100 hPa. Full details of the model version employed are given elsewhere [57].

The common representative intermediates mechanism (CRIv2-R5) [58-60], which represents the chemistry of methane and 22 emitted non-methane hydrocarbons, was employed in the model. Each parcel contains the concentrations of 219 species involved in 618 photolytic, gas-phase and heterogeneous chemical reactions, with a 5 minute time step. The formation of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) is represented using 14 species, which are derived from the oxidation of aromatic hydrocarbons, monoterpenes, and isoprene [59].

The surface emissions (man-made, biomass burning, vegetation, oceans, soil and 'other' surface emissions) are distributed using two-dimensional source maps [61]. Emissions totals for the base case run for CO, NO$_x$ and non-methane hydrocarbons are taken from the Precursor of Ozone and their Effects in the Troposphere (POET) inventory [62] for
the year 1998. The emission of the aromatic species ortho-xylene, benzene and toluene were taken from reference [63]. Biomass burning emission of ethyne, formaldehyde and acetic acid are produced using scaling factors from per mole of CO emitted, taken from reference [64]. NASA inventories are used for aircraft NOx emissions for 1992 taken from [65]. The lightning and aircraft NOx emissions are monthly averages and are 3-dimensional in distribution.

7.4 Results and Discussion

PE spectra of the ozone-ethene reaction, recorded in the 10.0-14.0 eV ionisation energy region, at constant initial reagent partial pressure at 5.0 and 30.0 m reactant mixing distance are shown in Figure 7.1. Bands associated with the reagents, ethene and ozone, as well as the products, oxygen, formaldehyde, carbon monoxide, carbon dioxide, formic acid and acetaldehyde, can be seen in this figure. A plot of their relative partial pressures as a function of reaction time, obtained from spectra recorded at different mixing distances at constant initial reagent partial pressures, are shown in Figure 7.2.

Because of overlap of the first two bands of ozone with the second band of ethene, the third band of ozone at 13.57 eV was used to monitor ozone partial pressures. Water was also observed as a reaction product but its intensity could not be measured reliably as its first band (at 12.62 eV; AIE = VIE) is overlapped by the ethene second band, the ozone first band and the oxygen first band. Methanol was not observed as a reaction product (first band 10.94 eV [66], AIE = VIE). As can be seen in Figure 7.2, the reagents decrease and the products increase smoothly with reaction time. It was found that for both ethene and ozone the decrease could be fitted to an exponential decay of the form,

\[ a \cdot e^{(-bt)} + c \]  

(7.1)

and the product increases could be fitted to an exponential increase of the form,

\[ a \cdot (1 - e^{(-bt)}) \]  

(7.2)

These fitted curves are shown as solid lines in Figure 7.2, 7.3 and 7.4. Comparison of the product yields measured at the longest mixing distance (reaction time) are shown in Table 7.2. These are expressed relative to the observed change in the reagent not in excess, which was ozone in all the experiments carried out. Also, shown in Table 7.2 is
a comparison with the product yields observed in other studies where product yields were measured [23, 25-28, 32].

Figure 7.1: Photoelectron spectra recorded for the ethene-ozone reaction at constant reagent partial pressure, at 298 K for reaction distances of 5 and 30 m.
Figure 7.2: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time at 298 K. Error bars have been derived from contributions of the experimental band intensities and experimental cross-sections (for convenience, the error bars on the oxygen and formaldehyde points have been displaced slightly horizontally; no error bars are shown on the minor products; they are shown in Figures 7.3 to 7.5).

Table 7.2: Observed products and measured product yields of the ethene-ozone reaction in this work, compared to those of previous work.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Molecule</th>
<th>This work m(a)</th>
<th><a href="b">23</a></th>
<th>[25] (c)</th>
<th>[26] (d)</th>
<th>[27] (e)</th>
<th>[32] (f)</th>
<th>[28] (g)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>H₂CO</td>
<td>0.89 ± 0.09</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.63 ± 0.11</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>0.66 ± 0.11</td>
<td>0.99 ± 0.06</td>
<td>0.92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>0.25 ± 0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.37 ± 0.03</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.28 ± 0.04</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO₂</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td>0.19 ± 0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.03</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(observed but could not be reliably measured)</td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H₂O</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCOOH</td>
<td>0.04 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.04 ± 0.01</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.03 ± 0.01</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HPMF(i)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.10 ± 0.04</td>
<td>0.35 ± 0.05</td>
<td>dominant</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.18 (h)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(CHO)₂O</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.24 ± 0.05</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>&lt; 0.001</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O₂</td>
<td>0.60 ± 0.06</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃CHO</td>
<td>0.09 ± 0.01</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(a) expressed in terms of the observed change in the reagent not in excess
(b) Herron and Huie 1977 PIMS study; O₃ in O₂ reacted with ethene at low pressure (8 torr total)
(c) Su et al. 1980 IR study in air at close to 1 atm. pressure
(d) Niki et al. 1981 IR study in air close to 1 atm. pressure
(e) Horie and Moortgat 1991 IR study in synthetic air close to 1 atm. pressure
(f) Grosjean and Grosjean 1996 study in air at 1 atm. pressure; analysis of carbonyl products with chromatography; cyclohexane scavenger added
(g) Neeb et al. (1998) IR study in air at close to 1 atm.
(h) HPMF + Formic Anhydride (CHO)₂O
(i) HPMF is hydroperoxy methylformate, CH₂(OOH)CHO
As can be seen, from this table, within experimental error, good agreement is obtained in this work with the results of other studies for the product yields of \( \text{H}_2\text{CO}, \text{CO}, \text{CO}_2 \) and \( \text{HCOOH} \). However, no evidence was obtained for production of formic anhydride, \( (\text{HCO})_2\text{O} \), (1\textsuperscript{st} band expected at 11.32 eV; AIE = VIE [67]) or hydroperoxy methylformate (HPMF), \( \text{CH}_2(\text{OOH})\text{CHO} \) which have been observed in other studies. The PE spectrum of HPMF does not appear to have been recorded previously but, based on the known spectrum of methyl formate [66]; it is expected to have a broad first band in the 10.0-11.0 eV ionisation energy region. The HPMF is thought to arise from reaction of the Criegee intermediate \( (\text{H}_2\text{CO})_2 \) with formic acid and decomposition of HPMF to \( (\text{HCO})_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \) occurs via a heterogeneous process [26, 28, 68]. Given the low yield of formic acid in this work, it is perhaps not surprising that HPMF and \( (\text{HCO})_2\text{O} \) are not observed. Two other products observed in this work were \( \text{O}_2 \) and \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} \). Although both of these products have been observed in other studies, they were not observed in the references used for Table 7.2, studies where relative product yields were measured [23, 25-28, 32]. \( \text{O}_2 \), a significant product, will not be observed in infrared studies as it is infrared inactive [25-27] and acetaldehyde may not have been observed in the previous work summarised in Table 7.2 [23, 25-28, 32] as it is produced in low yield. In the first documented study of this reaction by Cvetanovic \textit{et al.} [69], acetaldehyde was detected using gas-liquid chromatography to analyse the products (0.02 moles of acetaldehyde was observed for each mole of ozone consumed), and Kuhne \textit{et al.} [70] observed both oxygen and acetaldehyde in a study of this reaction at low pressure (2 torr) using infrared matrix isolation spectroscopy, mass spectrometry and microwave spectroscopy.

### 7.5 Kinetics Simulations

In order to propose a series of reactions which are consistent with the observed product yields and temporal profiles, and provide explanations for the main production reactions of the observed products, a series of box model calculations have been carried out using ACUCHEM [71]. The three published reaction schemes were initially used to simulate the results obtained [23, 27 and 30]. In each case good agreement was obtained with the published simulations with the reaction scheme of Heron and Huie [23] giving the best agreement with the experimental results. Comparison of these simulations [23] with the experimental results is shown in Figure 7.3.
Figure 7.3: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time at 298 K (solid lines) compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme of Herron and Huie [23]. The upper figure shows the reagents and the major products (O$_2$ and H$_2$CO) whereas the lower figure shows the minor products (CO, CO$_2$, CH$_3$CHO and HCOOH). Error bars have been derived from contributions of the experimental band intensities and experimental cross-sections, (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally).
Taking into account the experimental errors in the data points, the agreement for the reagents (O\textsubscript{3} and C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{4}), the dominant products (H\textsubscript{2}CO and O\textsubscript{2}), and the minor products (CO\textsubscript{2}, CO, HCOOH) is reasonably good. However, no acetaldehyde is produced in the simulation as there are no acetaldehyde production reactions in the reaction scheme of reference [23]. In order to establish the main production routes of the products, particularly oxygen and acetaldehyde, which have not been studied as a function of reaction time previously, the reaction scheme has been broken down into three parts and simulations have been performed in stages using the different components. These parts, A, B and C, are shown in Table 7.3.

![Table](Image)

Table 7.3: Reaction scheme used to simulate the ozone-ethene reaction at room temperature (298 K).

For calculations performed with rate coefficients (i), the rate coefficients were chosen as follows (see text):

(a) Set with the same ratios as used by Herron and Huie [23]; absolute values determined by simulation.

(b) Chosen because HO\textsubscript{2} + O\textsubscript{3} rate coefficient at room temperature is 2.0x10\textsuperscript{-13} cm\textsuperscript{3} molecule\textsuperscript{-1} s\textsuperscript{-1} [27].

(c) Apart from the reactions listed in A, the reactions listed in B were the reactions in the Herron and Huie [23] scheme which were found to make a significant, but small contribution, to the overall product yields. Other reactions listed in [23] were omitted.

(d) This was set to the value of 1x10\textsuperscript{-16} cm\textsuperscript{3} molecule\textsuperscript{-1} s\textsuperscript{-1} [25] but increased to 1x10\textsuperscript{-15} cm\textsuperscript{3} molecule\textsuperscript{-1} s\textsuperscript{-1} to increase the CH\textsubscript{2}CHO yield.

(e) Initial values were taken from the relative rate coefficients of H\textsubscript{2}CO\textsubscript{2} with C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{4} and H\textsubscript{2}CO in reference [25] and the H\textsubscript{2}CO\textsubscript{2} + H\textsubscript{2}CO reaction branching ratios in reference [28]. They were then increased to give acetaldehyde yields which agree within experimental errors with the observed yields.

(f) The coefficients shown in bold are those changed in (ii) compared to (i); these coefficients were optimised in (ii) to give better overall agreement for the experimental curves of the minor products (CO, CO\textsubscript{2}, HCOOH, and CH\textsubscript{2}CHO).
Part A consists of the initial \( \text{O}_3 + \text{C}_2\text{H}_4 \) reaction (reaction 1), which has a well established rate coefficient at room temperature \([18]\), decomposition reactions of the Criegee intermediate (reactions 2-6), and reaction of the Criegee intermediate with ozone to give formaldehyde and oxygen (reaction 7). It was important to include this reaction as it is a possible source of \( \text{O}_2 \). Part B contains the reactions in the Herron and Huie scheme \([23]\) which are not in part A, and were found in trial simulations to make significant contributions to the overall product yields. Of particular importance is reaction [8], \( \text{H} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{OH} \), which is a source of oxygen. In part C, other reactions of the Criegee intermediate are included, notably \( \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 \) with \( \text{C}_2\text{H}_4 \) (reaction 15, which gives \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} + \text{H}_2\text{CO} \)), \( \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 \) with \( \text{H}_2\text{CO} \) to give \( \text{H}_2\text{CO} + \text{HCOOH} \), \( \text{H}_2\text{CO} + \text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \), \( \text{HCO} + \text{OH} + \text{HCO} \), reactions (16), (17) and (18) respectively and \( \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 \) with \( \text{H}_2\text{CO} \) to give \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} + \text{O}_2 \) (reaction 19). This reaction was added as a possible source, with reaction (15), of acetaldehyde. Values of the rate coefficients used are shown in column 4 of Table 7.3 (listed under (i) in this table) and the sources of these values are listed in the footnotes of Table 7.3. Unless otherwise stated, the rate coefficients were taken from Herron and Huie \([23]\).

Three simulations were carried out using the rate coefficients listed under (i) in Table 7.3; A, A + B, and A + B + C. For A, for the reactants and major products (\( \text{H}_2\text{CO} \) and \( \text{O}_2 \)), the ozone and ethene decrease and final values, and formaldehyde increase and final yield are reasonable compared to experiment, but very low yields of oxygen were calculated. For the minor products (\( \text{CO} \), \( \text{CO}_2 \), \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} \), \( \text{HCOOH} \)), carbon monoxide and carbon dioxide are over-predicted, formic acid is reasonably well predicted and, as expected, no acetaldehyde is produced in the simulation. For the A + B simulation, the ozone and ethene, and formaldehyde curves are improved compared to A and the oxygen yield curve is close to the experimental curve. For the minor products, the carbon monoxide and carbon dioxide curves are much better than in A and agree reasonably well with experiment, the formic acid is reasonably well predicted and no acetaldehyde is produced because there are no \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} \) producing reactions in A and B. For the A + B + C simulation (see Figure 7.4), the ozone and ethene curves and the major product increases and final yields are reasonably good and are virtually unchanged from the A + B simulation. For the minor products, the CO curve is in better agreement with experiment than in the A + B simulation, the \( \text{CO}_2 \) and \( \text{HCOOH} \) curves show similar agreement to the A + B simulation and the acetaldehyde curve and final
yield are lower than experiment and outside the experimental error of the measurement (see Figure 7.4). Acetaldehyde is produced by reactions [15] and [19] with both contributing to the overall yields. These calculations were also repeated using the rate coefficients listed in column 5 of Table 7.3 (in (ii) of this table). This model has the same rate coefficients as in (i), except for the rate coefficients shown in bold which were optimised to give better overall agreement for the experimental curves of the minor products (CO, CO₂, HCOOH, and CH₃CHO). The results are shown in Figure 7.5. The agreement with the experimental curves for the reactants, ethene and ozone, and the major products, formaldehyde and oxygen, was essentially the same as that obtained with the rate coefficients (i) in Table 7.3, and as expected the agreement of the curves for the minor products was better (see Figures 7.4 and 7.5).

As stated earlier, the objective of these simulations is to identify the main reactions responsible for formation of the observed products. Although the rate coefficients listed in Table 7.3, under (i) and (ii), are not uniquely determined, the main reaction products can be identified based on the results of the simulations (which were made with reasonable values for rate coefficients).

The main products determined from the simulations were, O₂, formaldehyde, CO, CO₂, acetaldehyde and HCOOH. The main O₂ production reaction is from reaction (8). Formaldehyde is produced mainly by reaction (1), however reactions (9) and (10) are also important production routes for formaldehyde. The minor products CO, CO₂ and HCOOH are produced mainly by decomposition of the Criegee intermediate (reactions 2-6),

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{reaction (2)} & : & \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2 \\
\text{reaction (3)} & : & \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
\text{reaction (4)} & : & \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{H} + \text{HCO}_2 \\
\text{reaction (5)} & : & \text{H}_2\text{CO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCOOH} \\
\text{reaction (6)} & : & \text{HCO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{H} + \text{CO}_2
\end{align*}
\]

Acetaldehyde is produced by reactions (15) and (19), with both reactions contributing to the overall acetaldehyde yield. This is demonstrated by simulations of the type (A + B + C) without reaction (19).
Figure 7.4: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time at 298 K (solid lines) compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme A + B + C of Table 7.3, using rate coefficients (i) listed in column 4 of this table. The upper figure shows the reagents and the major products (O₂ and H₂CO) whereas the lower figure shows the minor products (CO, CO₂, CH₃CHO and HCOOH). (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally).
Figure 7.5: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time at 298 K (solid lines) compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme A + B + C of Table 7.3, using rate coefficients (ii) listed in column 5 of this table. The upper figure shows the reagents and the major products (O₂ and H₂CO) whereas the lower figure shows the minor products (CO, CO₂, CH₃CHO and HCOOH). (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally).
7.6 Results of Global Modelling

Based on global model simulations between 7.0-7.5 % of ethene oxidation occurs via reaction with ozone with the rest being initiated by OH (with NO₃ oxidation contributing less than 0.25% overall). Using the branching ratio data derived from this work the following annual global production totals for the various products were calculated as:- HCHO (0.96 ± 0.01 Tg), CO (0.22 ± 0.02 Tg ), CO₂ (0.25 ± 0.02 Tg ), HCOOH (0.052 ± 0.010 Tg), CH₃CHO (0.13 ± 0.01 Tg). These calculations assume that these products are primary products and therefore will be produced via these routes under atmospheric conditions. The kinetic modelling described in the previous section shows that this is true for H₂CO, CO, CO₂ and HCOOH. However, CH₃CHO is produced by the secondary reactions (15) and (19). These reactions will not be significant under atmospheric conditions and therefore the yield of CH₃CHO in the atmosphere is likely to be negligible.

In the global model used by Baboukas et al. [72], a yield of 42% was used for formic acid from the ozone-ethene reaction, taken from the work of Neeb et al. [29].

In this work the ozone-ethene reaction was studied using infrared spectroscopy and HPLC, in air at atmospheric pressure with water vapour added. Hydroxymethyl hydroperoxide (HMHP, HOCH₂OOH) was observed in reference [29] as an unstable product, which decomposes to HCOOH and H₂O on surfaces. The HMHP product yield was estimated in reference [29] as 42%. This is the figure quoted for formic acid production in reference [72]. On comparison of this value (0.42) with the values quoted in Table 7.4, of ≈ 0.04, the value of 0.42 is clearly too high by an order of magnitude. Also, it is evident that this figure does not apply to HCOOH production in the gas-phase, and therefore it is not appropriate to use this value in calculation of the global budget in the atmosphere. Therefore, the global production of HCOOH from the reaction of ozone with ethene has been significantly overestimated in this previous study [72].

The annual global emission levels of HCHO and HCOOH are approximately 4.8 and 7.3 Tg [54, 74]. The emission levels calculated in this work from the ozone-ethene reaction of (0.96 ± 0.01) and (0.052 ± 0.01) Tg for HCHO and HCOOH respectively, representing 20.0 and 0.7% of the total in each case. It is clear that the production of
HCHO from the ozone-ethene reaction, of 0.96 Tg per annum, is small but significant in terms of its global budget, which is dominated by production of HCHO from methane oxidation and oxidation of species such as isoprene (e.g. reference [73]).

The HCOOH yield from the ozone-ethene reaction is a much smaller fraction of the total emission. The other sources include other ozone-alkene reactions, photochemical oxidation of non-methane hydrocarbons, gas-phase reaction of H₂CO with HO₂, and vegetation and biogenic emissions. Global model simulations performed in this chapter were carried out by Prof. D. E. Shallcross of Bristol University.

### 7.7 Conclusion

The ozone-ethene reaction has been studied using a glass flow-tube interfaced to a photoelectron spectrometer, and the reagents and products have been monitored as a function of time. Kinetic simulations using an appropriate reaction scheme have been used to identify the main production reaction (or reactions) associated with each product and the measured product yields have been used in a global model to calculate the annual global emissions of the observed products in the atmosphere from this reaction.

The simulations indicate that of the observed products (H₂CO, CO, CO₂, HCOOH, CH₃CHO and O₂), H₂CO is mainly produced from decomposition of the primary ozonide formed in the first stage of the reaction and CO, CO₂ and HCOOH are mainly produced from decomposition of the Criegee intermediate which is also produced from decomposition of the primary ozonide. In contrast, CH₃CHO and O₂ are produced from subsequent reactions in the reaction scheme. As a result, the measured yields of H₂CO, CO, CO₂ and HCOOH are likely to be very similar to the corresponding yields from the ozone-ethene reaction in the atmosphere whereas the measured yields of CH₃CHO and O₂ will be very much lower under atmospheric conditions.
References

Wallington and G. Yarwood, The Mechanisms of Atmospheric Oxidation of the
12116.
[16] Y. Zhao, O. Tishchenko, J. R. Gour, W. Li, J. J. Lutz, P. Piecuch and D. G.
13301.
Ethene + Ozone


http://www.aero.jussieu.fr/projet/ACCENT/POET.php'.


Ethene + Ozone
A Study of 2-Methylpropene + Ozone and 2, 3 Dimethyl-2-butene + Ozone Reactions using PES

Alkenes from both biogenic and anthropogenic sources constitute an important class of volatile organic compounds (VOCs) in the troposphere and their reactions with ozone are key removal processes. These reactions produce OH radicals and results of modelling calculations indicate that they may be important sources of HO$_x$ species in the troposphere [1-3]. Their atmospheric importance has led to a significant number of experimental studies of their kinetics and mechanisms [1, 4-17]. Rate coefficients and products have been determined for a number of ozone-alkene reactions. However, while in general room temperature rate coefficients are well established, there are uncertainties concerning product branching ratios. In fact, no complete product branching ratio data are available for any alkene-ozone reaction apart from the ethene-ozone reaction. This reaction was investigated by our group recently at low pressure in a flow-tube using u.v. photoelectron spectroscopy and the product branching ratios were measured for all the main products. This present study extends this work by studying the reaction of O$_3$ with 2, 3-dimethyl-2-butene (DMB) and O$_3$ with 2-methylpropene (2MP).

The general mechanism for ozone-alkene reactions, first proposed by Criegee [18], is now widely accepted. It involves addition of ozone across the double bond of the alkene
to form a primary ozonide. This reaction is quite exothermic and results in decomposition of the primary ozonide into a carbonyl compound and a Criegee intermediate (R₁R₂COO) which may decompose, or react with the reagents or other products. Quantum chemical calculations [19-25] have shown that the activation barrier connecting the primary ozonide to the Criegee intermediate is ~20 kcal.mol⁻¹. The primary ozonide is formed with nearly 50 kcal.mol⁻¹ excess energy and it can easily pass over the barrier to form the Criegee intermediate and a carbonyl compound. Matrix isolation infrared spectroscopy has been used to study the reactions of ozone with 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene, cis-2-butene, cyclopentene and cyclopentadiene [26-28]. In each case, the observed spectra, obtained for different stages of the reaction, are consistent with the reaction proceeding via the Criegee mechanism, with spectral absorptions being recorded for the primary ozonide and Criegee intermediate.

Previous experimental studies of the reaction of O₃ with DMB and O₃ with 2MP have included measurement of rate coefficients and branching ratios [4-17]. Product branching ratios have been measured using a number of methods, notably photoionisation mass spectrometry (PIMS) at low pressure [7], and gas-phase infrared spectroscopy and chromatography [11, 14-17] of the reaction mixture heavily diluted in synthetic air at atmospheric pressure. The reaction product branching ratios derived in these investigations show only moderate agreement. Also the available product branching ratio data are incomplete as the yields of some of the known reaction products such as O₂ have not been measured and the yields of products such as CO, CO₂ and HCOOH have not been measured in all published investigations, as the detection methods used are capable of detecting some, but not all, of the products.

The reaction of O₃ with DMB and O₃ with 2MP were selected for study as a logical extension of our work on the reaction of O₃ with ethene. The reaction of O₃ with 2MP was felt to be particularly interesting as, unlike the reactions of O₃ with ethene and DMB, where a symmetrical primary ozonide is formed which can decompose in only one way, the primary ozonide in the reaction of O₃ with 2MP can decompose in two ways to give H₂CO and the Criegee intermediate Me₂COO, and Me₂CO and the Criegee intermediate H₂COO. The relative importance of these pathways will control the final product yields. The same detection technique was used in this investigation as that used for the reaction of O₃ with ethene (described in Chapter 7) to study the products of the reaction of O₃ with DMB and O₃ with 2MP as a function of time. The measured product
yields will be compared with product yields measured for these reactions in earlier work by other researchers. For each reaction, the measured product yields will be used in a global atmospheric model to estimate the annual global budgets of the observed products. Kinetics simulations will also be carried out for both reactions in order to establish the main pathway for production of each observed product.

8.1 Experimental

8.1.1 Photoelectron (PE) Spectra Recorded as a Function of Time

PE spectra were recorded for the reactions of O₃ with DMB and O₃ with 2MP at low pressure (~1-2 torr) at different reaction times using a flow-tube attached to the ionisation chamber of a PE spectrometer. The procedure used followed that adopted for the reaction of O₃ with ethene, with the main difference being that because the reactions of O₃ with DMB and O₃ with 2MP are faster than the reaction of O₃ with ethene, the glass flow-tube used was shorter. (Rate coefficients at 298 K for reactions of O₃ with DMB and O₃ with 2MP are 1.13x10⁻¹⁵ and 1.13x10⁻¹⁷ cm³.molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹ respectively [4]). No carrier gas was used. The flow-tube (length 50 cm) consisted of two concentric glass tubes, with the inner tube being moveable with respect to the outer tube. A schematic diagram of this inlet system has been shown previously in reference [29], Figure 3(d), where it was used to study the reaction of DMS with Cl₂.

For both reactions, the alkene was passed down the inner tube and ozone was passed down the outer tube via a side arm near the top. The lower end of the flow-tube, which was positioned just above the photon beam of the PE spectrometer, has a constricted end with a small hole in it which allowed gas to be sampled by the PE spectrometer. The hole size was 1.5 mm for the reaction of O₃ with DMB and 0.5 mm for the reaction of O₃ with 2MP. Spectra were recorded for both reactions for mixing distances along the flow-tube in the range 0-50 cm at 5 cm intervals. Studies were made for both [alkene] > [O₃] and [alkene] < [O₃].

Two baratron pressure transducers, positioned at 10 cm and 48 cm from the lower end of each inlet, were used to monitor the pressure change along the flow-tube under experimental conditions. By taking pressure measurements at these two points during a reaction, the flow-rate and linear flow velocity could be calculated using the Poiseuille
equation. Knowing the linear flow velocity, reaction distances could be converted into reaction times. Calculations were also made of the Reynolds number, using the measured flow-rates and the values obtained, which were less than 2000, were consistent with laminar flow in the flow-tube.

The PE spectrometer used was a 10 cm mean radius hemispherical analyser instrument with a He(I) photon source (21.22 eV) [30-32]. Ozone was made by a silent electric discharge of flowing oxygen and stored on non-indicating silica gel held at -78 °C in a dry-ice/acetone slush bath as described previously [33, 34]. Samples of the alkenes used were obtained from a commercial source (Aldrich, 99% for both DMB and 2MP).

8.1.2 Photoionisation Cross-Section Measurements

The experimental PE spectra recorded at different reaction times were used to obtain plots of partial pressures of reagents and products as a function of time. This was done by selecting a suitable band for a reagent or product, usually the first band, and using its intensity with the photoionisation cross-section for that band determined in this work to obtain its partial pressure. The procedure for determining molecular photoionisation cross-sections involved measuring the intensity of a selected band of a reagent or product relative to the intensity of the \((3p)^{-1}\) ionisation of argon from a sample containing known partial pressures of the molecule of interest and argon.

The method can be summarised as follows:-

A sample of known partial pressures of the molecule of interest and argon in a 7.3 L bulb is made up to a total pressure of 1 atm. with helium (e.g. a mixture of 2MP (5%) and argon (5%) in helium). The sample was then admitted to a differentially pumped stainless-steel flow-tube, interfaced to a PE spectrometer (with a 20 cm mean radius analyser) at a known flow-rate (typically 100 sccm) using a calibrated mass flow-controller, as described previously [29, 30]. A second calibrated mass flow controller was used to admit the carrier gas (helium) to the flow-tube at a fixed flow-rate (typically 1 slm). PE spectra were then recorded with the objective of measuring the intensity of a selected PE band of the molecule of interest (the band monitored as a function of time in the ozone-alkene experiments) relative to the argon \((3p)^{-1}\) PE bands. Also, the full PE spectrum of oxygen was recorded twice before sampling and twice after sampling. These spectra were used in the analysis procedure to correct for any change in the
transmission of the spectrometer during the sampling experiments. In most cases, the change in transmission during sampling was found to be small. From the experimental spectra, the area of the selected band of the molecule of interest, including all vibrational components, relative to the area of both spin-orbit components of the argon (3p)\(^1\) ionisation was measured. At least ten measurements were made in this way and the average value determined. This ratio was then corrected for the relative partial pressures of the sample and argon in the sample bulb. This is the photoionisation cross-section (PI-CS) on the spectrometer of the selected band of the molecule relative to the argon (3p)\(^1\) ionisation.

The PI-CS values derived in this way, which were used in the analysis of the spectra recorded for the alkene-ozone reactions of O\(_3\) with DMB and O\(_3\) with 2MP, are shown in column 2 of Table 8.1.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Molecule</th>
<th>PI-CS on the Spectrometer</th>
<th>PI-CS Corrected for e.K.E</th>
<th>PI-CS Corrected for e.K.E and Angular Distribution (a)</th>
<th>Literature PI-CS (b) Mb</th>
<th>Literature PI-CS relative to argon (c)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Argon</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>37.1 [^{[36]}]</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2MP</td>
<td>0.75 ± 0.04</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.02</td>
<td>10.7 [^{[37]}]</td>
<td>0.29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMB</td>
<td>0.98 ± 0.08</td>
<td>0.42 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.44 ± 0.03</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxygen</td>
<td>0.38 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.20 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.26 ± 0.02</td>
<td>7.42 [^{[38, 39]}]</td>
<td>0.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ozone, 3(^{\text{rd}}) band</td>
<td>0.59 ± 0.10</td>
<td>0.34 ± 0.05</td>
<td>0.39 ± 0.0(^{[40]})</td>
<td>12.6 [^{[35]}]</td>
<td>0.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbon Monoxide</td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.15 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.15 ± 0.02</td>
<td>7.0 [^{[40]}]</td>
<td>0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbon Dioxide</td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.16 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.20 ± 0.01</td>
<td>10.28 [^{[41, 42]}]</td>
<td>0.28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetaldehyde</td>
<td>0.63 ± 0.05</td>
<td>0.32 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.36 ± 0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formaldehyde</td>
<td>0.32 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.15 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.17 ± 0.01</td>
<td>8.47 [^{[43, 44]}]</td>
<td>0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetone</td>
<td>0.54 ± 0.07</td>
<td>0.26 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.30 ± 0.03</td>
<td>11.2 [^{[46]}]</td>
<td>0.30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water</td>
<td>0.27 ± 0.07</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.05</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.05</td>
<td>6.61 [^{[45]}]</td>
<td>0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formic Acid</td>
<td>0.80 ± 0.10</td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.02</td>
<td>15.0 [^{[46]}]</td>
<td>0.40</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.1: Comparison of photoelectron band Photoionisation Cross-Sections (PI-CS) relative to argon.

The first band of all the molecules has been used in the measurements, unless otherwise stated.

(a) Photoionisation cross-sections measured relative to argon (this work).
(b) Available literature photoionisation cross-sections (measured in Mb, 10\(^{-18}\)cm\(^2\)).
(c) Literature photoionisation cross-sections measured relative to argon at 37.1Mb \[^{[36]}\] and normalised to 1.
(d) Total cross-section at h\(\nu\) = 16.0 eV taken as 31 Mb \[^{[35]}\]; the cross-section for the third band was obtained by measuring its area relative to the total area (bands 1-3 in the He(I) spectrum).

However, in order to obtain absolute photoionisation cross-sections from the known photoionisation cross-section of argon, a correction must be made for the transmission of the analyser (this is an electron kinetic energy correction) and for the angular distribution parameters of the selected bands of both the molecule and argon. These
corrected values are shown in columns 3 and 4 of Table 8.1 respectively. As can be seen, the electron kinetic energy correction is much bigger than the angular distribution correction. (Independent experiments showed that the transmission functions of the two spectrometers used in this work, which had 10 cm and 20 cm mean radius analysers, were within experimental errors the same).

Also shown in Table 8.1, in column 5, are the available literature cross-sections for the relevant bands of the reagents and the observed reaction products at $\text{hv} = 21.22 \text{ eV}$ [35-46]. Column 6 of Table 8.1 shows the normalised values relative to argon. It can be seen in this table that on comparing column 6 with column 4 (the relative values derived in this work) that reasonably good agreement is obtained, supporting the values used in this work to convert relative PE band intensities into relative molecular partial pressures.

8.2 Description of the Global Model used

In order to use the results of this study to estimate the mass of products formed in the atmosphere, the Global Chemistry Transport Model CRI-STOCHEM, described in references [47, 48], has been used. The model used is an updated version of the UK Meteorological Office tropospheric chemistry transport model (STOCHEM) described by Collins et al. [49], with updates reported in detail in the recent paper of Utembe et al. [47]. STOCHEM is a global 3-dimensional Chemical Transport Model (CTM) which uses a Lagrangian approach to advect 50,000 air parcels using a 4th-order Runge-Kutta scheme with advection time steps of 3 hours. The transport and radiation models are driven by archived meteorological data, generated by the Met office numerical weather prediction models as analysis fields with a resolution of 1.25° longitude and 0.83° latitude, and on 12 vertical levels extending to 100 hPa. Full details of the version of the model that was employed are given elsewhere [50].

The common representative intermediates mechanism (CRIV2-R5) [51-53], which represents the chemistry of methane and 22 emitted non-methane hydrocarbons was employed in the model. Each parcel contains the concentrations of 219 species involved in 618 photolytic, gas phase and heterogeneous chemical reactions, with a 5 minute time step. The formation of secondary organic aerosol (SOA) is represented using 14
species, which are derived from the oxidation of aromatic hydrocarbons, monoterpenes, and isoprene [52].

The surface emissions (man-made, biomass burning, vegetation, oceans, and soil) are distributed using two-dimensional source maps [54]. Emissions totals for the base case run for CO, NOx and non methane hydrocarbons are taken from the Precursor of Ozone and their Effects in the Troposphere (POET) inventory [55] for the year 1998; more recent databases exist but do not cover as wide a range as POET and so we have used POET in this work.

The emissions of the aromatic species ortho-xylene, benzene and toluene were taken from reference [56]. Biomass burning emission of ethyne, formaldehyde and acetic acid are produced using scaling factors from per mole of CO emitted, taken from reference [57]. NASA inventories are used for aircraft NOx emissions for 1992 taken from reference [58]; again more recent estimates for regional emissions are available, but we prefer to use the previous global totals. The lightning and aircraft NOx emissions are monthly averages and are 3-dimensional in distribution.

8.3 Results and Discussions

For convenience, the results for DMB + ozone are described first, as DMB is more symmetrical than 2MP.

For each reaction, separate studies were made as a function of time with initial concentrations (i) [alkene] > [O3] and (ii) [alkene] < [O3]. Typical spectra recorded in the low ionisation region (8.0-14.0 eV) are shown in Figures 8.1 and 8.3.

Figure 8.1, obtained for O3 + DMB, shows two spectra obtained at 5 and 20 cm mixing distances with the initial concentrations [alkene] < [O3]. The plot of the relative partial pressure of the reagents and products as a function of reaction time obtained from this experiment is shown in Figure 8.2.

Similarly, Figure 8.3, obtained for O3 + 2MP, shows two spectra obtained at 5 and 40 cm mixing distances with the initial concentrations [alkene] > [O3], with the plots of relative partial pressures as a function of time shown in Figure 8.4.
Figure 8.1, recorded for the reaction of O$_3$ with DMB, shows bands associated with the products formaldehyde, oxygen, acetone, carbon monoxide, and carbon dioxide as well as bands associated with the reagents DMB and ozone. No formic acid was seen from this reaction.

Figure 8.2 and 8.4 show that the reagents decrease and the products increase smoothly with reaction time. It was found that both the decrease of DMB and ozone could be fitted to an exponential decay of the form,

$$a \cdot e^{(-bt)} + c$$

and the product increases could be fitted to an exponential increase of the form,

$$a \cdot (1 - e^{(-bt)})$$

These fitted curves are shown as solid lines in Figure 8.2. Because of overlap of the first two bands of ozone with the third band of DMB, the third band of ozone at 13.57 eV was used to monitor the ozone partial pressure. Water was also observed as a reaction product but its intensity could not be measured reliably as its first band is overlapped by the third band of DMB, the ozone first band and the oxygen first band.

Comparison of the product yields measured at the longest mixing distance (reaction time) is shown in Table 8.2. These are expressed relative to the observed change in the reagent not in excess. The observed product yields recorded with excess alkene and with excess ozone are in good agreement with each other, taking into account experimental error.

Also, listed in Table 8.2 are product yields measured in other studies [7, 14-17]. As can be seen, for the products, H$_2$CO, (CH$_3$)$_2$CO, CO, and CO$_2$, the product yields in this work agree reasonably well with those of other studies. O$_2$, a major product observed in this work, appears not to have been observed previously from the O$_3$ + DMB reaction. Its yield is reported here for the first time. Minor products observed in some of the other studies, but not observed in this work, with known vertical ionisation energies (VIEs) in brackets [59, 60], are CH$_3$OH (10.94 eV), CH$_3$COCHO (10.0 eV), and HOCH$_2$COCH$_3$ (10.0 eV).
Figure 8.1: Photoelectron spectra recorded for the $\text{O}_3 + \text{DMB}$ reaction at constant initial reagent partial pressures, $[\text{DMB}] < [\text{O}_3]$, at 5 and 20 cm reaction distance.
Figure 8.2: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time, obtained from the experiment carried out to obtain Figure 8.1. Error bars have been derived from contributions of the experimental band intensities and experimental cross-sections, (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>This work</th>
<th>This work</th>
<th>[11] (b)</th>
<th>[14] (c)</th>
<th>[15] (d)</th>
<th>[16] (e)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Excess alkene (a)</td>
<td>Excess Ozone (a)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H₂CO</td>
<td>0.385 ± 0.04</td>
<td>0.361 ± 0.04</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.119 ± 0.008</td>
<td>0.288 ± 0.023</td>
<td>0.426 ± 0.081</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(CH₃)₂CO</td>
<td>0.647 ± 0.10</td>
<td>0.707 ± 0.10</td>
<td>1.02 ± 0.13</td>
<td>0.88 ± 0.04</td>
<td>1.006 ± 0.049</td>
<td>1.14 ± 0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>0.052 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.036 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.07 ± 0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO₂</td>
<td>0.194 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.135 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.21 ± 0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H₂O</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃OH</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.04 ± 0.001</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.055 ± 0.014</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃COCHO</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.314 ± 0.071</td>
<td>0.284 ± 0.010</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOCH₂COCH₃</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.05 ± 0.01</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>(f)</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O₂</td>
<td>0.433 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.455 ± 0.04</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.2: Observed products and measured product yields in this work for the ozone plus 2, 3-dimethyl-2-butene (DMB) reaction, compared to those of previous work.

(*) observed but could not be reliably measured.

(a) expressed in terms of the observed change in the reagent not in excess.

(b) Niki et al. 1987 IR study in air at close to 1 atm pressure.

(c) Grosjean et al. 1994 study in air at 1 atm pressure; analysis of carbonyl and carboxylic acid products with chromatography; cyclohexane scavenger added.

(d) Grosjean and Grosjean 1996 study in air at 1 atm pressure; analysis of carbonyl products with chromatography in dry and humid air; cyclohexane scavenger added.

(e) Tuazon et al. 1997 gas chromatography and IR study in air close to 1 atm pressure; cyclohexane scavenger added.

(f) No differentiation between CH₃COCHO and HOCH₂COCH₃ could be made.
Figure 8.3 recorded for the $O_3 + 2MP$ reaction, shows bands associated with the products formaldehyde, oxygen, acetone, carbon monoxide, carbon dioxide and formic acid as well as bands associated with the reagents 2MP and ozone. The corresponding plot of the relative partial pressures of reagents and observed products as a function of reaction time is shown in Figure 8.4, with their exponential fits shown as solid lines. Again water was observed as a reaction product but its intensity was not measured because of band overlap problems.

The product yields measured at the longest mixing distance (reaction time) are shown in Table 8.3 for both $[\text{alkene}] > [O_3]$ and $[\text{alkene}] < [O_3]$. As with the DMB reaction, the product yields, expressed relative to the observed change in the reagent not in excess, are in good agreement for both $[\text{alkene}] > [O_3]$ and $[\text{alkene}] < [O_3]$. As shown in Table 8.3, the product yields measured in this work for $H_2CO$, $(CH_3)_2CO$, $CO$, $CO_2$ and $HCOOH$ are in reasonably good agreement with those measured earlier [11, 14-16].

Also, as with the $O_3 + DMB$ reaction, the $O_2$ product yield has not been measured previously and the $O_2$ yields quoted are the first to be reported. Methanol, methylglyoxal, hydroxyacetone, acetic acid, acetaldehyde and glyoxal have been reported as minor products in some other studies, but they were not observed in this work.

Also, no methyl acetate ($1^{st}$ and $2^{nd}$ VIEs expected at 10.48 and 11.16 eV [61]) was observed in the spectra recorded for the $O_3 + DMB$ and the $O_3 + 2MP$ reactions, indicating that, as is well known [4], the “ester channel” for decomposition of the Criegee intermediate $(CH_3)_2COO$ ($(CH_3)_2COO \rightarrow CH_3COOCH_3$) is not occurring, although from the results obtained for $O_3 + 2MP$ and $O_3 +$ ethene, it appears that the smaller Criegee intermediate $H_2COO$, decomposes via this route $(H_2COO \rightarrow HCOOH)$ to give formic acid. It has been proposed, based on high level electronic structure calculations that $H_2COO$ isomerises to form a dioxirane intermediate which further isomerises to formic acid [62, 63].
Figure 8.3: Photoelectron spectra recorded for the \( O_3 + 2MP \) reaction at constant initial reagent partial pressures, \([2MP] > [O_3]\), at 5 and 40 cm reaction distance.
Figure 8.4: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time, obtained from the experiment carried out to obtain Figure 8.3.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>This work Excess alkene (a)</th>
<th>This work Excess ozone (a)</th>
<th><a href="b">7</a></th>
<th><a href="c">14</a></th>
<th><a href="d">15</a></th>
<th><a href="e">16</a></th>
<th><a href="f">17</a></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>H₂CO</td>
<td>0.75 ± 0.08</td>
<td>0.75 ± 0.08</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.95 ± 0.098</td>
<td>1.01 ± 0.07</td>
<td>0.85 ± 0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(CH₃)₂CO</td>
<td>0.31 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.29 ± 0.03</td>
<td>0.41</td>
<td>0.27 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.340 ± 0.031</td>
<td>0.294 ± 0.031</td>
<td>0.32 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>0.10 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.09 ± 0.01</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.093 ± 0.011</td>
<td>0.06 ± 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO₂</td>
<td>0.24 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.277 ± 0.023</td>
<td>0.23 ± 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H₂O</td>
<td>*</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCOOH</td>
<td>0.05 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.05 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.156 ± 0.040</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.03 ± 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃OH</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.054 ± 0.007</td>
<td>0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃COOH</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃COCHO</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.434 ± 0.044</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.190 ± 0.016</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOCH₂COCH₃</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃CHO</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.024 ± 0.008</td>
<td>0.02 ± 0.007</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCOCHO</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.004 ± 0.003</td>
<td>0.006 ± 0.001</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O₂</td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.04</td>
<td>0.50 ± 0.04</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.3: Observed products and measured product yields in this work for the ozone plus 2-methyl propene (2MP) reaction, compared to those of previous work.

(*) observed but could not be reliably measured.
(a) expressed in terms of the observed change in the reagent not in excess.
(b) Herron and Huie 1978 PIMS study; O₃ in O₂ reacted with 2MP at low pressure (4 torr total).
(c) Grosjean et al. 1994 study in air at 1 atm. pressure; analysis of carbonyl and carboxylic acid products with chromatography; cyclohexane scavenger added.
(d) Grosjean and Grosjean 1996 study in air at 1 atm pressure; analysis of carbonyl products with chromatography in dry and humid air; cyclohexane scavenger added.
(e) Tuazon et al. 1997 gas chromatography and IR study in air close to 1 atm pressure; cyclohexane scavenger added.
(f) Sauer et al. 1998 IR, gas chromatography and HPLC study in air close to 1 atm pressure.
(g) No differentiation between CH₃COCHO and HOCH₂COCH₃ could be made.
(h) No differentiation between glyoxal and hydroxyacetaldehyde could be made.
8.3.1 Kinetics Simulations

Box model kinetics simulations were performed with ACUCHEM [64]. The objective was to propose a series of reactions for use in these simulations which give results which are consistent with the observed product yields and temporal profiles, and provide explanations for the main production reactions of the observed products. For O$_3$ + DMB, as with the ozone + ethene reaction, in order to establish the main production routes of the products, a reaction scheme has been constructed of three parts (A, B and C shown in Table 8.4), and simulations have been performed in steps using the different components.

Part A consists of the initial O$_3$ + DMB reaction (reaction 1 in Table 8.4) which has a well established rate coefficient [4] and decomposition reactions of the Criegee intermediate (CH$_3$)$_2$COO with rate coefficients taken from references [7, 8, 13 and 65]. In part C, reactions of the Criegee intermediate with O$_3$, DMB and CH$_3$ were included with rate coefficients taken from the rate coefficients used for the reactions H$_2$COO + ethene, (see Chapter 7), H$_2$COO + O$_3$, (used for the (CH$_3$)$_2$COO + DMB and (CH$_3$)$_2$COO + O$_3$ reactions respectively), and the known rate coefficient for HO$_2$ + CH$_3$ → CH$_3$O + OH [66] (used for the (CH$_3$)$_2$CO$_2$ + CH$_3$ → CH$_3$O + (CH$_3$)$_2$CO reaction). Reactions in part B were other reactions in the DMB + O$_3$ reaction scheme of reference [8] which were found in trial simulations to make significant contributions to the product yields. Rate coefficients for these reactions were taken from reference [8]. Four simulations were carried out for both of the two experimental conditions [DMB] > [O$_3$] and [DMB] < [O$_3$] using the rate coefficients listed in Table 8.4.

These were (A), (A + B), (A + C) and (A + B + C). The results of these simulations (the A + B + C plots) compared to experiment are shown in Figures 8.5 and 8.6. As can be seen for [DMB] < [O$_3$] (Figure 8.5), the decrease of the reagents and the increase of the major products H$_2$CO, (CH$_3$)$_2$CO and O$_2$ is fitted within experimental error as are the plots obtained for the minor products CO and CO$_2$. Similar agreement is obtained for the results obtained with [DMB] > [O$_3$] (Figure 8.6), with the CO$_2$ curve computed to be lower than the experimental curve. The rate coefficients listed in Table 8.4 are not uniquely determined and so reasonable values for the rate coefficients were made for the simulations. These were valuable in that they allowed the main reactions to be identified for the production of the observed products.
The main reaction products observed were acetone, formaldehyde, O₂, CO₂, CO and H₂O. Acetone is mainly produced by reaction (1), formaldehyde is produced mainly by reaction (17), O₂ is mainly produced by reactions (16) and (22), CO₂ is mainly produced via reaction (2), a decomposition reaction of the Criegee intermediate which is also the main production channel for CH₃. The main channel for CO production is reaction (5), another decomposition channel of the Criegee intermediate, and H₂O is produced mainly by reaction (11),

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Step</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>*Rate Coefficient</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>1(α)</td>
<td>C₆H₁₂ + O₃ = (CH₃)₂CO + (CH₃)₂COO</td>
<td>1.13x10⁻¹⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2(β)</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO = CH₃ + CH₃ + CO₂</td>
<td>2.50x10⁻⁰⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO = CH₃COCH₂ + OH</td>
<td>7.80x10⁻⁰⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO = CH₃C(O)OCH₃</td>
<td>5.00x10⁻⁰⁴</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5(γ)</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO = CH₃O + CH₃ + CO</td>
<td>1.70x10⁻⁰⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO = CH₃O + CH₃CO</td>
<td>4.40x10⁻⁰⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO = CH₃C(O)O + CH₃</td>
<td>1.10x10⁻⁰⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>H + C₆H₁₂ = C₆H₁₃</td>
<td>3.82x10⁻¹³</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>H + O₃ = OH + O₂</td>
<td>2.66x10⁻¹¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>OH + C₆H₁₂ = C₆H₁₂OH</td>
<td>1.19x10⁻¹⁰</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11(δ)</td>
<td>OH + CH₂O = H₂O + HCO</td>
<td>1.39x10⁻¹⁰</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
<td>OH + CO = CO₂ + H</td>
<td>1.49x10⁻¹³</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td>HO₂ + HO₂ = H₂O₂ + O₂</td>
<td>5.65x10⁻¹²</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
<td>HO₂ + OH = H₂O + O₂</td>
<td>7.97x10⁻¹¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>HO₂ + CH₂O = CH₃OH + O₂</td>
<td>1.66x10⁻¹²</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>16(ε)</td>
<td>CH₅ + O₃ = CH₂O + H + O₂</td>
<td>9.13x10⁻¹³</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>17(ζ)</td>
<td>CH₅ + CH₂O = CH₄ + CH₂O</td>
<td>4.50x10⁻¹¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>18</td>
<td>CH₂O + O₂ = CH₂O + HO₂</td>
<td>1.49x10⁻¹⁵</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>19</td>
<td>CH₂O + CH₂O = CH₂O + CH₂OH</td>
<td>2.49x10⁻¹¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>CH₂O + OH = CH₂O + H₂O</td>
<td>4.98x10⁻¹¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO + C₆H₁₂ = (CH₃)₂CO + C₆H₁₂O</td>
<td>5.00x10⁻¹⁴</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>22(θ)</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO + O₃ = (CH₃)₂CO + O₂ + O₂</td>
<td>1.00x10⁻¹³</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>23</td>
<td>(CH₃)₂COO + CH₃ = (CH₃)₂CO + CH₃O</td>
<td>3.01x10⁻¹¹</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 8.4: Reaction scheme used to simulate the Ozone-DMB reaction.

(*) rate coefficients (in units cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹) were selected as described in the text.
(a) Main (CH₃)₂CO production route.
(b) Main CO₂ and CH₃ production route.
(c) Main CO production route.
(d) Main H₂O production channel.
(e) Main O₂ and H atom production route.
(f) Main CH₃O production route.
(g) O₂ production route for [DMB] > [O₃].

181
Figure 8.5: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time (solid lines) for $O_3 + DMB$, with $[DMB] < [O_3]$, compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme $A + B + C$ of Table 8.4, using rate coefficients listed in this table. The upper figure shows the reagents and the products ($O_2$ and $(CH)_2CO$) whereas the lower figure shows the products (CO, CO$_2$, and H$_2$CO). (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally). The initial partial pressures are those shown in Figure 8.2; DMB 0.29 torr, Ozone 0.51 torr.
Figure 8.6: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time (solid lines) for O$_3$ + DMB, with [DMB] > [O$_3$], compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme A + B + C of Table 8.4, using rate coefficients listed in this table. The upper figure shows the reagents and the products (O$_2$ and (CH$_3$)$_2$CO) whereas the lower figure shows the products (CO, CO$_2$, and H$_2$CO). (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally). The initial partial pressures were DMB 0.51 torr, Ozone 0.29 torr.
### 2MP + Ozone

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Step</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>*Rate Coefficient</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>A</strong></td>
<td>1&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} )</td>
<td>( 7.31 \times 10^{-18} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2&lt;sup&gt;b&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 = \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CO} )</td>
<td>( 4.31 \times 10^{-18} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3&lt;sup&gt;c&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} = \text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2 )</td>
<td>( 5.76 \times 10^{-03} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} = \text{CO}_2 + \text{H} + \text{H} )</td>
<td>( 2.88 \times 10^{-03} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5&lt;sup&gt;d&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} = \text{CO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>( 2.14 \times 10^{-04} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} = \text{H} + \text{HCO}_2 )</td>
<td>( 2.88 \times 10^{-03} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7&lt;sup&gt;e&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} = \text{HCOOH} )</td>
<td>( 1.92 \times 10^{-03} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>( \text{HCO}_2 = \text{H} + \text{CO}_2 )</td>
<td>( 3.20 \times 10^{-04} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>9&lt;sup&gt;f&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} = \text{CH}_3 + \text{CH}_3 + \text{CO}_2 )</td>
<td>( 2.50 \times 10^{-05} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} = \text{CH}_3\text{COCH}_2 + \text{OH} )</td>
<td>( 7.80 \times 10^{-05} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} = \text{CH}_3\text{C(O)OCH}_3 )</td>
<td>( 5.00 \times 10^{-04} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} = \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{CH}_3 + \text{CO} )</td>
<td>( 1.70 \times 10^{-05} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} = \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{CH}_2\text{CO} )</td>
<td>( 4.40 \times 10^{-05} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} = \text{CH}_3\text{C(O)O} + \text{CH}_3 )</td>
<td>( 1.10 \times 10^{-05} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{O}_3 = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 1.00 \times 10^{-15} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} + \text{O}_3 = (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CO} + \text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 1.00 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>B</strong></td>
<td>17</td>
<td>( \text{H} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 = \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 )</td>
<td>( 3.82 \times 10^{-12} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>18</td>
<td>( \text{H} + \text{O}_3 = \text{OH} + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 2.66 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>19</td>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 = \text{C}_2\text{H}_6\text{OH} )</td>
<td>( 1.49 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{HCO} )</td>
<td>( 1.39 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>21</td>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{CO} = \text{CO}_2 + \text{H} )</td>
<td>( 1.49 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>22</td>
<td>( \text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 = \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 5.65 \times 10^{-12} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>23</td>
<td>( \text{HO}_2 + \text{OH} = \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 7.97 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>24</td>
<td>( \text{HO}_2 + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{CH}_3\text{OH} + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 1.66 \times 10^{-12} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>25&lt;sup&gt;g&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_3 = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{H} + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>( 9.13 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_3 + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{CH}_4 + \text{CH}_3\text{O} )</td>
<td>( 4.50 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{O}_2 = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{HO}_2 )</td>
<td>( 1.49 \times 10^{-15} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>28</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{CH}_3\text{O} = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{CH}_3\text{OH} )</td>
<td>( 2.49 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>29</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{OH} = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>( 4.98 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C</strong></td>
<td>30</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{HCOOH} )</td>
<td>( 4.00 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>31</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>( 2.00 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>32</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{HCO} + \text{HCO} + \text{OH} )</td>
<td>( 2.00 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>33</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{CH}_2\text{O} = \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{HO}_2 )</td>
<td>( 1.00 \times 10^{-13} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>34</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} + \text{CH}_3 = (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CO} + \text{CH}_3\text{O} )</td>
<td>( 3.01 \times 10^{-11} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>35</td>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 = (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CO} + \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} )</td>
<td>( 1.00 \times 10^{-15} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>36</td>
<td>( (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{COO} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_5 = (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CO} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{O} )</td>
<td>( 5.00 \times 10^{-14} )</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 8.5:** Reaction scheme used to simulate the Ozone-2MP reaction.

(*) rate coefficients (in units cm<sup>3</sup> molecule<sup>-1</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>) were selected as described in the text.

(a) Main CH<sub>2</sub>OH production route.
(b) Main (CH<sub>3</sub>)<sub>2</sub>CO production route.
(c) Main CO<sub>2</sub> production route with step (9).
(d) Main CO production route; this is also the main H<sub>2</sub>O production channel.
(e) Main HCOOH production route.
(f) Main CO<sub>2</sub> production route with step (3).
(g) Main O<sub>3</sub> production route.
A reaction scheme, made from a combination of the reactions used in the reaction schemes for O$_3$ + ethene and O$_3$ + DMB, was constructed for the O$_3$ + 2MP reaction and is shown in Table 8.5. The reaction rate coefficients were kept the same as those used in the O$_3$ + ethene and O$_3$ + DMB simulations. As with the O$_3$ + ethene and O$_3$ + DMB reaction schemes it was constructed in three parts (A), (B), and (C).

Simulations of the type (A), (A + B), (A + C) and (A + B + C) were also performed and a comparison of the experimental and simulated (A + B + C) plots are shown in Figures 8.7 and 8.8. For [2MP] > [O$_3$], the decrease of the reagents and the increase of the major products formaldehyde, acetone and oxygen is fitted within experimental error, as is the plot for the minor product formic acid. However, CO$_2$ is under predicted and CO is over predicted (see Figure 8.7). For [2MP] < [O$_3$], similar trends are observed, as can be seen in Figure 8.8. From these simulations, the main reactions for the production of the observed products could be identified.

The main reaction products were formaldehyde which is mainly formed from reaction (1), acetone which is formed mainly from reaction (2), O$_2$ which is produced mainly by reaction (25) with reaction (18) also contributing, CO$_2$ is produced by reactions (3) and (9) with, reaction (9) being the dominant channel (these reactions are decomposition reactions of the Criegee intermediates H$_2$COO and (CH$_3$)$_2$COO respectively), CO is produced mainly by reaction (5) which is also the main production route for water and reaction (7) which is the main production route for formic acid.

When comparing the yields obtained in this work with those obtained in previous studies, see Tables 8.2 and 8.3, it is important to bear in mind the different experimental conditions used. Apart from the work of reference [7], which is a PIMS study of the O$_3$ + 2MP reaction at low pressure in the presence of O$_2$, comparison is made in these tables between the results of this work, which is performed at low pressure, with other studies made in air at atmospheric pressure [11, 14-17].

For the O$_3$ + DMB reaction, the main production routes of (CH$_3$)$_2$CO, CO and CO$_2$ in this work involved decomposition of the Criegee intermediate (CH$_3$)$_2$COO. This is also true in the higher pressure studies of references [11, 14-16] and hence the product yields (CH$_3$)$_2$CO, CO and CO$_2$ in Table 8.2 of this work and references [11, 14-16] can be directly compared.
Figure 8.7: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time (solid lines) for \( \text{O}_3 + 2\text{MP}, \) with \([2\text{MP}] > [\text{O}_3]\), compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme \( A + B + C \) of Table 8.5, using rate coefficients listed in this table. The upper figure shows the reagents and the products (\( \text{O}_2 \) and \( \text{H}_2\text{CO} \)) whereas the lower figure shows the products (\( \text{CO}, \text{CO}_2, (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CO} \) and \( \text{HCOOH} \)). (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally). The initial partial pressures were as used for Figure 8.4.
Figure 8.8: Plot of reagent and product partial pressures as a function of reaction time (solid lines) for \(\text{O}_3 + 2\text{MP}\), with \([\text{2MP}] < [\text{O}_3]\), compared with the results of simulations using the reaction scheme \(A + B + C\) of Table 8.5, using rate coefficients listed in this table. The upper figure shows the reagents and the products (\(\text{O}_2\) and \(\text{H}_2\text{CO}\)) whereas the lower figure shows the products (\(\text{CO}, \text{CO}_2, (\text{CH}_3)\text{CO}\) and \(\text{HCOOH}\)). (for convenience, in some cases error bars have been displaced slightly horizontally). The initial partial pressures were 2MP 0.07 torr and Ozone 0.09 torr.
However, for H$_2$CO, the main reaction responsible for production of H$_2$CO in this work is reaction (17) of Table 8.4 (i.e. CH$_3$ + CH$_3$O → CH$_4$ + H$_2$CO) whereas under the conditions used in references [11, 14-16] H$_2$CO arises from rearrangement of (CH$_3$)$_2$COO to form a hydroperoxide, CH$_3$C(OOH)=CH$_2$ followed by subsequent reaction with O$_2$, i.e.

\[
(\text{CH}_3\text{C(OOOH)=CH}_2)^* \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{C(OOH)=CH}_2 + \text{OH}
\]  
(8.1)

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{C(OOCH)} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{C(OOCH)} + \text{CH}_3\text{C(OOH)=CH}_2
\]
(8.2)

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{C(OOCH)} + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{C(OOCH)} + \text{CH}_3\text{C(OOH)=CH}_2
\]
(8.3)

\[
(\text{CH}_3\text{C(OOH)=CH}_2)^* \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{C(OOH)=CH}_2 + \text{OH}
\]
(8.4)

Because of this, the yield of H$_2$CO measured in this work and the H$_2$CO yields quoted in Table 8.2 [7, 14-16] cannot be directly compared. Because H$_2$CO arises in this work from a secondary reaction, listed in Table 8.4 section B (reaction (17) CH$_3$ + CH$_3$O → CH$_4$ + H$_2$CO), it is not appropriate to use the H$_2$CO yield from the O$_3$ + DMB reaction of this work to estimate the global yield of H$_2$CO.

In contrast, for the O$_3$ + 2MP reaction, in the present study H$_2$CO was found to arise mainly from reaction (1) in Table 8.5 (O$_3$ + 2MP → H$_2$CO + (CH$_3$)$_2$COO). Of the previous studies quoted in Table 8.3, references [14-17] were carried out in air at 1 atm. pressure and reference [7] was carried out at low pressure with added oxygen. In these studies, [7, 14-17] extra H$_2$CO should be produced by the route outlined above (involving formation of a hydroperoxide and reaction with O$_2$), and hence the H$_2$CO yields quoted in Table 8.3 in references [7, 14-17] might be expected to be greater than that measured in this work.

This appears to be the case for the results of references [7, 15, 16 and 17] (which are larger by ~30% than the yield of this work) but not for the H$_2$CO yields of references [14] (see Table 8.3). We therefore conclude that the H$_2$CO yield measured in this present work for the O$_3$ + 2MP reaction can be used in global model calculations but is expected to yield a value which is an underestimate (by ~30%).
8.3.2 Results of Global Modelling

Based on global model simulations, approximately 20% of DMB oxidation occurs via reaction with ozone, with oxidation initiated by OH being approximately 4% and oxidation by NO$_3$ contributing 76%. Determining the annual global emission total for DMB is difficult, but based on the POET [55] emission database for butane, an upper limit of 7.0 Tg is estimated. Using the branching ratio data derived from this work, the following upper limits for the observed products per annum, excluding oxygen, are H$_2$CO (0.52 Tg), CO (0.06 Tg), CO$_2$ (0.24 Tg), and (CH$_3$)$_2$CO (0.90 Tg). These calculations assume that these products are primary products and therefore will be produced via these routes under atmospheric conditions.

The kinetic modelling described in the previous section shows that this is true for (CH$_3$)$_2$CO, CO and CO$_2$. However, H$_2$CO is produced mainly by the secondary reaction (17) in Table 8.4. This reaction will not be significant under atmospheric conditions and therefore the yield of H$_2$CO measured in this work cannot be used to determine an annual global yield. However, if the results of reference [11], an infrared study in air at ~1 atm pressure, are taken as representative of the higher pressure studies in air, an annual global yield of ~10% lower than 0.56 Tg is to be expected, where the main source of H$_2$CO in this case is formation of a hydroperoxide from the Criegee intermediate, (CH$_3$)$_2$COO, followed by subsequent reaction with oxygen (see the reactions written above). The annual global emission level of acetone is estimated as approximately 78 Tg (17.1 Tg as direct emission and the rest in-situ production) [47] and therefore the expected upper limit of 0.9 Tg.year$^{-1}$ of (CH$_3$)$_2$CO determined for the O$_3$ + DMB reaction represents 1% of the in-situ source.

Similar global simulations were carried out for 2MP. It was found that approximately 7.5% of 2MP oxidation occurs via reaction with ozone, with OH initiated oxidation being approximately 75% and NO$_3$ oxidation contributing 17%. An upper limit of about 7.0 Tg.year$^{-1}$ is estimated for the global emission total of 2MP. Using the branching ratio values derived in this work, the following upper limits for the annual yields of the observed products, excluding oxygen, are H$_2$CO (0.50 Tg), CO(0.05 Tg), CO$_2$ (0.13 Tg), HCOOH( 25.0 Gg) and (CH$_3$)$_2$CO (0.16 Tg), where the H$_2$CO yield has been increased by 30% as noted above to give an upper limit estimate. Inspection of Table 8.5 shows that CO, CO$_2$, HCOOH and (CH$_3$)$_2$CO are primary products which will be
produced under atmospheric conditions. Estimated annual global production levels of H$_2$CO, HCOOH and (CH$_3$)$_2$CO are 2200, 7.3 and 78 Tg [55, 67], and the annual production levels of H$_2$CO, HCOOH and (CH$_3$)$_2$CO derived in this work from the reaction of O$_3$ with 2MP represent 0.02, 0.30 and 0.20% of the totals respectively.

These results emphasise that the structure of the alkene is critical. For DMB, atmospheric oxidation is dominated by NO$_3$ whereas for 2MP atmospheric oxidation is mainly via reaction with OH, with ozone oxidation playing a minor role for 2MP but a more prominent role for DMB. In terms of acetone production, this work shows that ozonolysis of short-lived alkenes cannot be ignored. Global model simulations performed in this chapter were carried out by Prof. D. E. Shallcross of Bristol University.

8.4 Conclusions

The O$_3$ + DMB and O$_3$ + 2MP reactions have been studied as a function of time using a flowtube interfaced to a photoelectron spectrometer. Photoelectron band intensities for the reactants and observed products were converted to partial pressures using photoionisation cross-sections which were measured as part of this work. For each reaction, kinetic simulations were used to simulate the observed time-dependences of the reactants and products, and to identify the dominant reactions in a reaction scheme, which are responsible for the observed products. Also global model simulations were used to convert the observed product yields into upper limits produced from these reactions in the atmosphere.

The main result of this work is that for the first time for the two ozone-alkene reactions studied the yields of all the main reaction products, including oxygen, have been measured by the same experimental method.
**References**


2MP + Ozone


http://www.aero.jussieu.fr/projet/ACCENT/POET.php'.


2MP + Ozone


Chapter 9

A Study of Selected Triatomics using TPES and PES

During the course of this project, four weeks were allocated at the Elettra synchrotron radiation facility in Trieste, Italy, to study three non-linear triatomic molecules, SF$_2$, HOCl and HO$_2$ using threshold photoelectron spectroscopy (TPES). Three experiments were carried out with the following objectives,

1. To record a well resolved first TPE band of the molecule SF$_2$ with reduced contributions from S$_2$, from the consecutive reactions,

   \[ F + OCS \rightarrow SF + CO \] \hspace{1cm} (9.1)

   \[ SF + SF \rightarrow SF_2 + S \] \hspace{1cm} (9.2)

   \[ S + S + M \rightarrow S_2 + M \] \hspace{1cm} (9.3)

2. To record the TPE spectrum of the first two bands of the unstable intermediate hypochlorous acid (HOCl), where HOCl is produced from the reactions,

   \[ Cl_2 + HgO(s) \rightarrow Cl_2O + Hg(s) \] \hspace{1cm} (9.4)

   \[ Cl_2O + H_2O \rightarrow 2HOCl \] \hspace{1cm} (9.5)

3. To record a TPE spectrum of HO$_2$ from the reaction,

   \[ F + H_2O_2 \rightarrow HO_2 + HF \] \hspace{1cm} (9.6)

   in the photon energy region 10.5-13.5 eV, to observe the first band of HO$_2$. 
A Study of Selected Triatomics

HO₂ has been widely studied because of its importance in atmospheric and combustion chemistry [1-3]. The He(I) PE spectrum, recorded by Dyke et al. [4], shows vibrational structure associated with a progression in the O-O symmetric stretching mode with a measured first AIE of (11.35 ± 0.01) eV and a measured vibrational frequency of (1560 ± 50) cm⁻¹ (0.19 eV). The aim of the present work was to record a high resolution TPE spectrum of the vibrational structure observed from PES studies of HO₂ in the photon energy range 11.3 to 12.2 eV.

In this work, HO₂ was prepared for a TPES study using reaction (9.6), which has an estimated room temperature rate coefficient of 4.98x10⁻¹¹ cm³.molecules⁻¹ s⁻¹ [5]. H₂O₂ was prepared in the gas-phase for this reaction by warming a hydrogen peroxide urea complex mixed in sand (SiO₂, Sigma Aldrich), using a weight ratio of 1:2, to 35 °C in a round bottom flask. The H₂O₂ vapour was then flowed through a teflon coated glass inlet (as described in Chapter 3 section 3.2.1) where it reacted with F atoms (produced from discharging F₂) forming HO₂ + HF. A secondary reaction also occurs using this experimental method, which gives O₂ from reaction (9.7),

\[
F + HO_2 \rightarrow O_2 + HF \quad (9.7)
\]

This has an estimated room temperature rate coefficient of 8.30x10⁻¹¹ cm³.molecules⁻¹ s⁻¹ [5]. The recorded TPE spectrum of HO₂ shows three vibrational components at (11.35 ± 0.01) eV, (11.55 ± 0.01) eV and (11.75 ± 0.01) eV. O₂ and H₂O were also observed from the recorded TPE spectra with O₂ arising from reaction (9.7) and H₂O occurring during heating of H₂O₂. Large fluctuations in band intensities were observed when recording TPE spectra of HO₂. These fluctuations were due to poor temperature control on the heating mantle used to warm the urea complex resulting in an unsteady flow of H₂O₂ vapour. As a consequence of this generally poor spectra were obtained. This experiment needs to be repeated using a heating mantle with a more reliable thermostat which will give a constant vapour pressure of H₂O₂. Because of this, the work on HO₂ is still ongoing and so will not be presented in this thesis.

The first experiment performed at Elettra was to record the TPE spectrum of SF₂. SF₂ had previously been investigated at Elettra, using reactions (9.1) to (9.2) to prepare SF₂. TPE spectra were recorded with a low [SF₂]:[S₂] ratio. In order to obtain a higher [SF₂]:[S₂] ratio the production method was first optimised at Southampton using PES before being studied at Elettra. To achieve a higher [SF₂]:[S₂] ratio the reaction mixing
distance was reduced in order to minimise the contribution of reaction (9.3) thereby reducing the $S_2$ signal observed in the TPE spectra. The results obtained from this work are compared with results of recent *ab initio* calculations and are described in section 9.1 of this chapter.

The second experiment performed at Elettra was to attempt to record a well resolved TPE spectrum of the unstable intermediate hypochlorous acid (HOCI), prepared from reactions (9.4) and (9.5) by bubbling Cl$_2$ through an aqueous solution of mercuric oxide (HgO). Initial PE spectra of this molecule were recorded in Southampton using a He(I) photon source on the synchrotron PE spectrometer (described in section 3.4.2 of Chapter 3), before it was transported to Elettra to be used for TPES measurements, in order to optimise the method to produce HOCI. HOCI was observed reproducibly from recorded PE spectra in Southampton. However, attempts made to reproduce these results at the synchrotron facility using the proposed method proved unsuccessful, with HOCI being produced in small amounts for short periods of time. This meant that the method used to prepare HOCI for TPES study had to be developed further in order to allow HOCI PE spectra, where HOCI is prepared from reactions (9.4) and (9.5), to be obtained for extended periods of time (~4 hours). These conditions were necessary in order to be able to record TPE spectra at Elettra.

A reliable method has now been developed to record TPE spectra of HOCI consistently for upwards of 4 hours and is discussed in the second part of this chapter (see section 9.5) with the first section of this chapter describing the results of the SF$_2$ investigation carried out at Elettra.

9.1 A Study of SF$_2$ using TPES

SF$_x$ reactive intermediates have received considerable attention both experimentally and theoretically because of their importance in the semiconductor industry [6], where they play a major role in plasma etching.

The He(I) PE spectrum of SF$_2$ was recorded in 1978 by de Leeuw *et al.* [7] where SF$_2$ was prepared using the reaction of OCS with discharged SF$_6$ (or CF$_4$). Five PE bands were observed in the He(I) PE spectrum with vibrational structure only observed in the first PE band. This showed a regular series in the symmetric stretching mode of the ion, with an average separation of 935 cm$^{-1}$ (116 meV) [7]. The first adiabatic and vertical
first ionisation energy, AIE and VIE, were experimentally determined in this study as (10.08 ± 0.02) eV and (10.31 ± 0.02) eV respectively. Using Resonance Enhanced Multi-Photon Ionisation (REMPI), Li et al. [8] assigned eight Rydberg series showing structure in vibrational frequencies, ν₁ and ν₂. A first AIE for SF₂ of 10.021 eV was also determined in this study from Rydberg series extrapolation.

Electronic structure calculations have also been performed on SF₂. Irikura et al. [9] carried out ab initio calculations to determine the molecular structure and the thermochemistry of the SFₙ (n = 1 to 5) molecules and their respective cations in the gas-phase, determining a first AIE of (10.15 ± 0.19) eV and vibrational frequencies of ν₁ = 840 cm⁻¹, ν₂ = 339 cm⁻¹ and ν₃ = 827 cm⁻¹ for the ground state of SF₂ and ν₁ = 956 cm⁻¹, ν₂ = 389 cm⁻¹ and ν₃ = 976 cm⁻¹ for the ground state of SF₂⁺. Lee et al. [10] simulated the He(I) PE spectrum of SF₂ using ab initio calculations on SF₂ and SF₂⁺ followed by Franck-Condon factor calculations allowing for anharmonicity. Good agreement was observed for the first PE band when comparing the simulated PE spectrum to that recorded by de Leeuw et al. [7]. Computed vibrational frequencies were also obtained in this work as, ν₁ = 846.6 cm⁻¹, ν₂ = 357.0 cm⁻¹ and ν₃ = 823.9 cm⁻¹ for the ground state of SF₂ and ν₁ = 985.6 cm⁻¹, ν₂ = 413.4 cm⁻¹ and ν₃ = 1012.5 cm⁻¹ for the ground state of SF₂⁺ with a determined first AIE of 10.075 eV [10]. A summary of the vibrational frequencies, AIEs and VIEs determined is shown in Table 9.1.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Vibrational Frequency (cm⁻¹)</th>
<th>Ionisation Energy (eV)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ν₁</td>
<td>ν₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kirchhoff et al. [11]</td>
<td>840 ± 20</td>
<td>357 ± 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deroche et al. [12]</td>
<td>838.5299 ± 0.0015</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glinsky et al. [13,14]</td>
<td>838 ± 2</td>
<td>355 ± 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irikura et al. [9]</td>
<td>840</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(SF₂⁺) [9]</td>
<td>956</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lee et al. [10]</td>
<td>846.6</td>
<td>357.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(SF₂⁺) [10]</td>
<td>985.6</td>
<td>413.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>de Leeuw et al. [7]</td>
<td>935 ± 40</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Li et al. [8]</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>This Work</td>
<td>(See Table 9.3)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 9.1: Summary of the vibrational frequencies, AIEs and VIEs recorded experimentally and theoretically.

In the present work, the first PE band of SF₂ has been investigated by TPES measurements with the aim of obtaining a high resolution PE spectrum of the first band of SF₂ to determine the first AIE, VIE and ionic state vibrational constants.
9.2 Experimental

All the experiments reported in this chapter were carried out on the Circularly Polarised Beamline (4.2R, Polar) at the Elettra synchrotron radiation source using the photoelectron spectrometer described in section 3.4.2 of Chapter 3. SF$_2$ was produced from reactions (9.1) to (9.2). These reactions have room temperature rate coefficients of $1.8 \times 10^{-11}$ cm$^3$.molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ and $2.5 \times 10^{-11}$ cm$^3$.molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ respectively [15]. F atoms were made in this work by discharging F$_2$ as described in Chapter 3 section 3.2.1.

Before carrying out any TPE measurements at Elettra, the experimental method was first optimised in Southampton, to determine the optimum partial pressures and reactant mixing distance required to yield the highest [SF$_2$]:[S$_2$] ratio, from PES measurements. These were found to be $\Delta p$ (Ar) = $5.40 \times 10^{-7}$ mbar, $\Delta p$ (OCS) = $2.80 \times 10^{-6}$ mbar and $\Delta p$ (5% F$_2$/He) = $6.00 \times 10^{-6}$ mbar. The optimum reaction mixing distance which gave the highest [SF$_2$]:[S$_2$] ratio was found to be 0 cm above the photon beam. Argon was introduced with the reagents to optimise the voltages when recording TPE spectra, as described in Chapter 3 section 3.4.3.

9.3 Results and Discussion

He(I) PE spectra recorded for the F + OCS reaction, at mixing distances of 8 cm and 0 cm above the photon beam, are shown in Figure 9.1. It can be seen in both PE spectra that SF$_2$ shows a regular vibrational progression between 10.0 eV and 11.0 eV [9, 14], with a first AIE and VIE of $(10.076 \pm 0.005)$ eV and $(10.320 \pm 0.005)$ eV respectively (determined from this work). Secondary products of reaction (9.1) are observed in both spectra, i.e. S atoms, which have a first IE of 10.36 eV [16] and S$_2$, which has four bands in the energy region of interest, at 9.41 eV, 11.82 eV, 12.33 eV and 13.20 eV (VIE) [17]. CO and CO$_2$ are also observed in the spectra with first VIEs of 14.01 eV and 13.78 eV respectively [18].

Previous TPE measurements at Elettra on SF$_2$ (2007) were recorded at a mixing distance of 8 cm and revealed a low [SF$_2$]:[S$_2$] ratio. PE spectra recorded at this mixing distance also revealed a low [SF$_2$]:[S$_2$] ratio, as shown in the upper PE spectrum in Figure 9.1, with significantly more S$_2$ than S atoms being observed. A higher S$_2$ production is expected at longer mixing distances as this allows an increased recombination time of S atoms than that at shorter mixing distances. However, the yield
of SF₂ appears reasonable and the vibrational progression is clearly visible with very little excess OCS observed, under the reaction conditions used. However, a TPE study of O₂ by Ellis et al. [19] revealed that in TPE experiments, the vibrational structure associated with the first band of O₂ extended beyond that observed from PE spectra (12.08 eV to 12.98 eV) showing vibrational structure between the first two bands (13 eV to 16 eV). This extra structure arises from autoionisation in the TPE work. Because S₂ has a very similar PE spectrum to O₂ (they have the same valence electronic structure) and assuming that the same autoionisation effect occurs in S₂ as in O₂, extra vibrational structure would be observed in the TPE spectrum from that seen in the PE spectrum through the ionisation region of interest (9.7 eV to 10.7 eV). This was apparent in this IE region in the previous TPE spectra recorded at a mixing distance of 8 cm.

It was therefore necessary to obtain conditions for recording TPE spectra of SF₂ with a lower yield of S₂ production and this was the aim of this investigation. It was found that using shorter mixing distances (0 cm) provided a higher yield of SF₂ relative to S₂ from initial PES measurements. This is observed from Figure 9.1 (bottom PE spectrum) which shows significantly smaller quantities of S and S₂ production. At shorter mixing distances S atoms have considerably less time in which to recombine to form S₂ which makes these conditions, where a high [SF₂]:[S₂] ratio is observed, more suitable for recording TPE spectra than those at longer mixing distances. Lee et al. have carried out ab initio calculations on the ground states of SF₂ and SF₂⁺ to simulate the He(I) spectrum of SF₂ including effects of anharmonicity [20]. The simulated He(I) PE spectrum of SF₂ is shown below in Figure 9.2 with a FWHM resolution of each component of 1meV. This spectrum was simulated at a Boltzmann temperature of 600 K. The bands observed at ca. 9.98 eV are attributed to “hot” bands as there features are not seen from spectra (experimental and simulated) obtained at room temperature. Additional “hot” bands are also observed, associated with the main vibrational components and are labelled in red in Figure 9.2.

The TPE spectrum of SF₂ recorded under the optimum conditions, determined from PES measurements, which gives the highest [SF₂]:[S₂] ratio obtained from the F + OCS reaction at Elettra is shown in Figure 9.3.
Figure 9.1: He(I) PE spectra recorded for the reaction F + OCS (recorded at room temperature, 298 K) showing a low [SF$_2$]-[S] ratio (top spectrum) and a high [SF$_2$]-[S] ratio (bottom spectrum).
Figure 9.2: Simulated He(I) PE spectrum of SF$_2$ at a vibrational Boltzmann temperature of 600 K.

Figure 9.3: TPE spectrum of SF$_2$ (recorded at room temperature, 298 K) obtained at the Elettra synchrotron radiation facility using a high [SF$_2$]:[S$_2$] ratio in the photon energy region 10 eV to 11 eV.
More vibrational structure is observed in the TPE spectrum for SF$_2$, shown in Figure 9.3, than from that seen in the PE spectrum, (bottom spectrum in Figure 9.1). Additional structure arises because TPE spectra are subject to autoionisation processes (see Chapter 2), which can lead to non-Franck-Condon distributions as well as the observation of ionic vibrational levels which are not observed in the normal Franck-Condon distribution. The main SF$_2$ features in the TPE spectrum in Figure 9.3 have been assigned with the help of the PE spectra shown in Figure 9.1. It is apparent from the PE spectrum that even when recorded under the optimum conditions (high [SF$_2$]:[S$_2$] ratio), there is still a residual amount of S$_2$ produced.

However from the PES results, it was expected that the SF$_2$ band would be clear from any S$_2$ contamination, due to the low quantities of S$_2$ observed, with the exception of the S atom band which occurs at 10.36 eV. Unfortunately, residual amounts of S$_2$ formed from the recombination of S atoms were seen in all recorded TPE spectra and proved difficult to remove completely. The vibrational bands attributed to autoionisation of S$_2$ overlap those of SF$_2$ and are labelled in blue with the main SF$_2$ bands labelled red in Figure 9.3. S$_2$ band positions shown in Figure 9.3 ($v = 7$ to 16) have been extrapolated forward from vibrational spacings measured for intense S$_2$ bands ($v = 0$ to 6, which are not overlapped) occurring lower in ionisation energy. Each S$_2$ vibrational component consists of two spin-orbit components and these are shown for $v = 7$ to 16 in Figure 9.3. SH and S are also visible in the TPE spectrum and arise from secondary reactions.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Vibrational Component</th>
<th>Band Position (eV)</th>
<th>Spacing $\Delta E_{vib}$ (cm$^{-1}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$v = 0$</td>
<td>10.076 ± 0.002</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 1$</td>
<td>10.198 ± 0.003</td>
<td>984 ± 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 2$</td>
<td>10.320 ± 0.004</td>
<td>976 ± 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 3$</td>
<td>10.441 ± 0.003</td>
<td>976 ± 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 4$</td>
<td>10.559 ± 0.002</td>
<td>976 ± 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 5$</td>
<td>10.680 ± 0.001</td>
<td>976 ± 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 6$</td>
<td>10.799 ± 0.002</td>
<td>958 ± 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$v = 7$</td>
<td>10.919 ± 0.001</td>
<td>958 ± 8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Table 9.2: Band positions of the SF$_2$ vibrational components obtained from fitting the experimental bands using Gaussian functions.*

The contribution of S$_2$ bands in this energy region prevented the observation of any additional structure in the SF$_2$ vibrational progression, i.e. contributions from “hot” bands, as seen in the simulated PE spectrum of SF$_2$ in Figure 9.2, or progressions in another vibrational mode (other than $v_1$). In order to determine band positions for SF$_2$,
each component observed was fitted using an asymmetric Gaussian function. This was carried out for all the recorded TPE spectra in this region and the results were averaged. The determined band positions for SF$_2$ are shown in Table 9.2. The spacings, $\Delta E_{\text{vib}}$, between the bands are also given in the Table 9.2.

Vibrational components $v = 4, 5, 6$ and $7$ are clearly observed from Figure 9.3, and as a result the associated band positions were straightforward to determine. However, the vibrational components $v = 1, 2$ and $3$ are overlapped by additional bands, and had to be deconvoluted in order to determine their positions. The first vibrational component, $v = 0$, is not overlapped however, is very low in intensity. Therefore fitting the bands in this energy region ($10.00$ eV to $10.25$ eV) is approximate due to the reduced intensities and amount of overlap observed. Knowing the positions of the last four vibrational components ($v = 4, 5, 6$ and $7$), and the spacing between them, allowed an approximate position of the first four vibrational ($v = 0, 1, 2$ and $3$) components to be determined by extrapolation.

Vibrational constants, $\omega_e$ and $\omega_e\chi_e$, could therefore be determined in the symmetric stretching mode of the ionic state of SF$_2$ by plotting the measured $\Delta E_{\text{vib}}$ against as a function of $(v + 1)$ yielding a line of slope $-2\omega_e\chi_e$ and intercept $\omega_e$ (see Chapter 2 for details). The results are shown in Table 9.3.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Vibrational Constants</th>
<th>This Work</th>
<th>Lee et al.[10]</th>
<th>de Leeuw et al.[7]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$\omega_e$ (cm$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>$988 \pm 7$</td>
<td>$985.6$</td>
<td>$935 \pm 40$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\omega_e\chi_e$ (cm$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>$2 \pm 1$</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Table 9.3: Comparison of recently and previously determined vibrational constants for the ionic state of SF$_2$."

The results obtained in the present work compare well with those determined previously, particularly those obtained by Lee et al. from *ab initio*/Franck-Condon factor calculations [10]. The agreement between the results obtained in the present TPES work and those of Lee et al. demonstrate the significance of the high resolution obtained from TPES compared to conventional PES despite the presence of S$_2$ in TPE spectra.

**9.4 Conclusion**

TPE spectra were recorded at the Elettra synchrotron facility for the triatomic molecules HO$_2$ and SF$_2$. Problems occurred in both experiments, with vapour pressure
fluctuations, arising from a heating mantle with poor temperature control preventing stable conditions needed to record TPE spectra of HO₂, and S₂ contamination from SF₂ measurements. Initial TPE spectra of HO₂ show vibrational components in the symmetric stretching mode at 11.35 eV, 11.55 eV and 11.75 eV. However, only a modest improvement in the resolution between the PE and TPE spectra was observed, which prevented the observation of any underlying structure. The fourth vibrational component of HO₂ was not reproducible under the reaction conditions and therefore could not be confidently assigned. The poor resolution observed when recording TPE spectra was due to the inability to maintain a constant temperature, to within ± 0.1°C, of the heated complex used to prepare H₂O₂ in the vapour phase from the apparatus used. As a result, the TPE spectra obtained, all suffered from fluctuations due to the temperature instability, which gave rise to a H₂O₂ vapour pressure variation. This experiment needs to be carried out again with an accurate temperature control on the heating system in order to maintain a constant vapour pressure of H₂O₂ with the aim of resolving any underlying structure in the HO₂ first PE band and to obtain a clear spectrum of the second band which is expected to have its first component in the 11.5 eV to 12.0 eV region [21-23].

From the SF₂ investigation, good agreement was observed between the AIE and VIE values, obtained in the present work and with results of state-of-the-art ab initio calculations [8, 10] (within 1 meV). The vibrational constant (ωc) for the first symmetric stretching mode in the ground ionic state was also in good agreement with that quoted by Lee at al. [10]

Unfortunately, the presence of an S₂ vibrational progression, arising from autoionisation in the TPE measurements, prevented the observation of any additional structure, and although better resolution was achieved with respect to previous experimental work, it was not possible to obtain more information from the SF₂ spectra. For this reason, another experimental approach is currently being investigated to produce SF₂. This involves discharging either SF₄ [24] or SF₆ [25] heavily diluted in argon in attempt to minimise the production of S₂ observed from autoionisation processes in the energy region of interest. Similarly, an improved experimental protocol is needed to repeat the TPE measurements on HO₂, which will provide stable conditions for H₂O₂ production, in the hope of resolving the underlying structure associated with the first two PE bands of HO₂.
9.5 A Study of HOCl and Cl<sub>2</sub>O using TPES and PES

The stratospheric chemistry of halogenated compounds has been the subject of numerous studies due to potential perturbations in the ozone layer which result from release of anthropogenic halogenated hydrocarbons [26-31]. Hypochlorous acid (HOCl) is an atmospherically important chlorine containing reservoir molecule. HOCl is produced in the stratosphere as a result of the reaction (9.8) [26-31],

\[ \text{HO}_2 + \text{ClO} \rightarrow \text{HOCl} + \text{O}_2 \]  
(9.8)

This has a measured room temperature rate coefficient of (4-6) x 10<sup>-12</sup> cm<sup>3</sup>.molecules<sup>-1</sup>s<sup>-1</sup> [32-36]. It is also produced heterogeneously on ice surfaces in polar stratospheric clouds via the reaction [37],

\[ \text{ClONO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{HOCl} + \text{HNO}_3 \]  
(9.9)

HOCl is destroyed in the atmosphere by various processes, e.g. photolysis and reaction with the OH radical [38]. Its importance is that it acts as a reservoir for OH and Cl species which are involved in the catalytic destruction of ozone.

Experimental ionisation energies have been obtained for HOCl and chlorine monoxide (Cl<sub>2</sub>O), prepared by reactions (9.4) and (9.5), from photoelectron spectroscopic studies using He(I) radiation (21.22 eV) by Frost and McDowell [39, 40]. Two vibrationally resolved PE bands were observed for HOCl. The adiabatic ionisation energy (AIE) and vertical ionisation energy (VIE) of the first PE band were measured as (11.12 ± 0.01) eV and (11.23 ± 0.01) eV respectively and the VIE of the second PE band was measured as (12.29 ± 0.01) eV. VIEs for the first four PE bands for Cl<sub>2</sub>O were determined to be (11.02 ± 0.02) eV, (12.37 ± 0.02) eV, (12.65 ± 0.02) eV and (12.79 ± 0.02) eV [40].

Potential energy surfaces for ground and excited electronic states of HOCl have been calculated using ab initio molecular orbital (MO) configuration interaction (CI) methods [41, 42]. On the basis of these calculations two transitions were calculated at 335 nm and 245 nm (vertical transition wavelengths) which are in close agreement with the experimental band maxima in the ultraviolet absorption spectra recorded by Molina et al. [26] and Mishalanie et al. [29]. Another theoretical study has performed ab initio electronic structure calculations to calculate the ionisation energies of HOCl through
perturbation corrections to Koopmans’ theorem, obtaining a first VIE of 11.21 eV [43]. The first two PE bands of HOCl have also been simulated at the MP2 level using the aug-cc-pVTZ basis set and assuming a harmonic model for the vibrational frequencies [44]. In this study, the AIE of the first PE band was determined to be 11.07 eV. A theoretical investigation by Glukhovstev et al. [45] using ab initio calculations at the G2 level reports the first AIE of HOCl to be 11.08 eV which is in good agreement with the result of an earlier study of Lee et al. [44].

Initially the aim of this project was to measure the threshold photoelectron (TPE) spectrum of the first two bands of HOCl, where HOCl is produced from the reactions (9.4) and (9.5), at the Elettra synchrotron radiation facility. However, during the time at Elettra, the method used to prepare HOCl, which followed that of Bell et al. [46] proved to be unsuccessful and not reproducible in obtaining an intense, clean HOCl PE spectrum for a sufficiently long time. The aim of this project was therefore to develop a reproducible method to obtain and record the PE spectrum of HOCl, and ultimately to optimise the method in order to record its TPE spectrum at Elettra. The PE spectrum of chlorine monoxide (Cl₂O), produced from reaction (9.4), has already been recorded by Frost and McDowell [40]. However there appears no evidence in the literature that its TPE spectrum has ever been recorded. Therefore a related objective was to develop a method to record a pure PE spectrum for Cl₂O produced from reaction (9.4) with the intention of recording its TPE spectrum at Elettra.

9.6 Experimental

The initial method used at Elettra to produce HOCl involved bubbling Cl₂ through a suspension of mercuric oxide (HgO) in water, contained in a round bottom flask, for several hours before introducing the HOCl vapour formed in solution directly to the ionisation chamber of the spectrometer. Although HOCl had been observed by PES from this preparation method previously in Southampton, in most cases at Elettra, HOCl was not observed in PE spectra, (PE spectra were recorded before recording TPE spectra to ensure that the sample preparation was successful) and when HOCl was observed, the spectra obtained were either not of sufficient quality and/or HOCl was only produced over a short period of time. This meant that TPE spectrum of HOCl could not be recorded, as a stable source which is steady over a period of at least several hours.
A variety of different methods have been used to prepare HOCl and Cl₂O previously. The most commonly used methods are the Bell method [46, 47] (as described above), the Klemm (or bulb) method [46], the Cady method [49, 50] and the column method [51, 52], all of which employ subtle variations of the reactions (9.4) and (9.5). The Bell, Klemm and Cady methods all involve making a sample of HOCl away from the spectrometer and bringing it to the spectrometer where it is then sampled, whereas the column method has the advantage of being online where HOCl can be detected and investigated spectroscopically as it is formed during the reaction.

The Klemm method, also referred to as the bulb method, uses a large (e.g. 2L) glass sample bulb containing solid HgO which is exposed to Cl₂, forming Cl₂O from reaction (9.4). Cl₂O is then converted to HOCl using the ambient moisture already adsorbed on the HgO. The Cady method, however, forms Cl₂O in a separate reaction. Firstly Cl₂ is bubbled through a flask containing dry carbon tetrachloride (CCl₄) and then HgO is added to the mixture, when a sufficiently high concentration of Cl₂ in CCl₄ has been obtained, to form Cl₂O. The solution is then filtered to remove the reacted HgO powder and mixed with H₂O. The CCl₄ is then pumped away to yield a relatively pure sample of HOCl.

The column method involves creating HOCl in-situ, by passing Cl₂ gas and H₂O vapour through a column system containing HgO powder. Variations of the column method have been used, with Barnes et al. [31, 51, 52] using a mixture of HgO and 6 mm glass beads (glass beads are used to ensure loose packing of the HgO powder within the column) and Fujiwara et al. [30] adopting a column packed solely with neat HgO powder. The column method has the advantage of being a continuous process, making it possible to introduce the HOCl directly to the spectrometer as it is formed, minimising any decomposition which can occur from wall losses or surface reactions which may take place whilst admitting the sample to the spectrometer, as might be the case in the off-line methods of Bell, Klemm or Cady.

In this work a different experimental approach was taken from that used previously at the synchrotron source (Bell method) in order to record a PE spectrum of sufficient quality over long periods of time (at least 4 hours) which is suitable to allow the TPE spectrum of HOCl to be recorded. The method used involved producing HOCl in-situ using an online column set-up rather than preparing a sample off the spectrometer. This
was also the favoured method chosen for preparing a Cl₂O source which will in future be used to record TPE spectra.

9.6.1 Sample Preparation

The column used in this work was a glass tube, 350 mm long with inner and outer diameters of 10 mm and 12 mm respectively. This contained a glass frit ~5 mm long, of porosity grade 0, to enable maximum sample throughput whilst preventing any HgO powder entering the ionisation region of the spectrometer. The frit was positioned in the glass column 150 mm above the point of photoionisation. Cl₂ and H₂O were admitted separately at the top of the inlet via a T-junction. The inlet was mounted on the ionisation chamber of the small spectrometer. Needle valves were used to regulate the flow rates of Cl₂ and H₂O.

The column was packed off-line in all sample preparations and brought to the spectrometer. Various packing regimes were used during this work and these are shown schematically as (A), (B) and (C) in Figure 9.4. All sample preparations in the column used a ~5 mm bed of glass wool which was packed on top of the glass frit to ensure that no HgO powder entered the ionisation chamber of the spectrometer.

Method (A)

Initial tests with the column method used a glass inlet which was packed with 10 mm of HgO powder on top of a ~5 mm bed of glass wool positioned on the glass frit. This is shown in Figure 9.4 as inlet (A). Good yields of HOCl were observed from the PE spectra recorded using this column. Chlorine monoxide (Cl₂O) was also observed in the spectra using inlet (A), as were the reagents Cl₂ and H₂O; however, further testing revealed that this system was not suitable for measurements lasting longer than an hour. After passing Cl₂ and H₂O through this column for 30 mins to 1 hour, the HgO powder began to discolor as it was consumed in the reaction and it provided lower yields of HOCl with increased reaction time. Poor reproducibility was also experienced when attempting to replicate the method under the same conditions. This indicated that the distribution of the HgO packing within the column and the availability of surface reaction sites were important for this experiment. This method did however provide good preliminary results with high yields of HOCl being produced over short periods of time, with the amount of HgO in the column being the rate determining factor for the
A Study of Selected Triatomics

overall lifetime of the HOCl source. To increase the reaction lifetime, more HgO powder was added to the column. However it was found that packing the column with a ≥ 15 mm length of HgO powder prevented a uniform flow of Cl_2 and H_2O vapour. Due to the poor flow conditions when using a ≥ 15 mm length of HgO powder within the column, discoloration of the HgO appeared to only take place on the top surface indicating that the bulk of HgO remained unreacted. From these results it was concluded that using more HgO powder would provide the reaction longevity required when recording TPE spectra (4-6 hours) and that distributing the HgO, i.e. increasing its surface area within the inlet, would provide the reagents being admitted with a more uniform flow and allow them easier access to the HgO surfaces.

Method (B)

In order to improve the reaction lifetime and ensure a steady reagent throughput within the inlet, the surface area and the amount of HgO used was therefore increased. Initially, the inlet was filled with a loose packing of glass wool (on top of a compact 10 mm glass wool bed). HgO powder was then finely dispersed throughout the inlet, covering the loosely packed glass wool, to increase its surface area. However, this proved to be a more difficult column preparation to replicate than that described in method (A). Each column could never be prepared in exactly the same way, and as a consequence inconsistent results were obtained. In order to produce an even dispersion of HgO powder, the inlet was filled with 3 mm glass beads. The glass beads provided a fixed surface area to disperse the HgO powder on and this approach was deemed to be a more robust method when preparing the inlet than using glass wool. The use of glass beads also helped to maintain steady flow conditions for both the reactants (Cl_2 and H_2O) [31, 51, 52]. This column is shown schematically in Figure 9.4 as inlet (B).
In both variations of sample preparation (with glass wool and with glass beads), dispersing HgO evenly and consistently proved to be very difficult, and hence it was difficult to obtain a reproducible source of HOCl. In some cases, HOCl was produced for short periods of time with intense PE spectra of HOCl being observed; however in contrast some preparations of the column provided too great a reagent flow rate and resulted in no HOCl being observed in the PE spectra with all the HgO in the inlet appearing to remain unreacted (i.e. no discolouration of the HgO powder was observed during the run) with just Cl₂ and H₂O being observed in the PE spectra.

Method (C)

The best column set-up, which continually provided consistent results with an extended reaction lifetime, involved stacking successive layers of HgO powder, each 10 mm long, on alternating 10 mm long compacted glass wool stacks which covered the length of the inlet tube, i.e. from the glass frit positioned near the base of the inlet, (150 mm above the photoionisation region), to the top of the inlet where the Cl₂ and H₂O were admitted (~200 mm). This column is shown as inlet (C) in Figure 9.4. Stacking layers of HgO powder on top of glass wool, as shown in Figure 9.4, initially provided poor reagent flow conditions; however it was found that the reagent flow rates gradually settled down over time (usually taking no more than a few minutes). An advantage found in using this method was that adding more HgO powder to the inlet tube in stages (in stacks of ≤ 10mm deep) increased the reaction lifetime without compromising the flow rate of the reagents. The increased lifetime of the reaction is beneficial for recording TPE spectra at the synchrotron radiation facility at Elettra, Trieste, where spectra may need to be recorded continuously over long periods of time (4-6 hours). Preparing the column by stacking the HgO in layers provided good results which were consistent over several hours. However, it was discovered that this method, although generally reproducible, was not always fully reproducible in terms of producing a good source of HOCl every time. This appeared to be related to the time that HgO was exposed to the air between preparing the column, mounting it and pumping it down on the spectrometer. The best results were obtained when the column was coupled to the spectrometer directly after being prepared with a short exposure time of HgO to ambient conditions. This is possibly due to moisture in the air being adsorbed on the HgO reducing the number of active sites available for reaction.
It was noted from the work of Secoy and Cady [49] that in some cases pre-heating HgO for extended periods of time (an hour or longer) before carrying out experiments may be an important factor. Therefore the inlet system was coupled to the PE spectrometer using a water cooled flange and heated using heating tape to 300°C for 2-3 hours before the experiment. A K-type (Ni-Cr/Ni-Al) thermocouple, in contact with the external wall of the inlet, was used to measure the temperature whilst heating. The tube was left to cool to ambient temperature before carrying out the reaction. It was found that pre-heating the inlet in this way provided more reproducible reaction conditions. This may be because by pre-heating the inlet to such temperatures removes adsorbed species, e.g. H₂O, from the surface of HgO providing more active sites for the reaction to take place. Stacking the HgO powder in sections in this way, separated by glass wool, and pre-heating the HgO contained in the tube, provided a stable and reproducible set of reaction conditions, which ultimately gave reproducible results. A PE spectrum of HOCl, recorded in this work, is shown in Figure 9.5. The PE spectrum shown in Figure 9.5 was recorded after 4 hours of reaction time using inlet (C). Reproducible spectra could be obtained over this time.

![Figure 9.5: PE spectrum showing the first and second PE bands of HOCl and residual Cl₂ (inset) and the first PE band of H₂O. The experiment was performed using method (C) shown in Figure 9.4.](image-url)
When recording the PE spectra of HOCl, H_2O was initially added to the column. Once the flow conditions were stable Cl_2 was then added. When optimising the reagent partial pressures to maximise the HOCl signal by adjusting flow rates of H_2O and Cl_2, Cl_2O was observed with low intensity when the flow rates of H_2O and Cl_2 were approximately equal. It was seen that the first and second PE bands of Cl_2O overlapped with the first and second bands of HOCl. In order to identify the extent of band overlap of HOCl with Cl_2O, a method was developed to record a clean PE spectrum of Cl_2O which can be sustained for long periods of time with the aim of recording its TPE spectrum. Preliminary experiments were carried out, using the same column set-up as that described above, for producing HOCl, by passing Cl_2 over dry HgO. These initial experiments showed that Cl_2O could not be formed by passing Cl_2 over dry HgO, as has been described previously by Molina et al. [26] and that the reaction required H_2O to be present throughout, revealing that H_2O was necessary for the formation of Cl_2O.

For the optimum experimental conditions for recording the PE spectrum of HOCl, it was found that, H_2O was required to be in excess throughout the reaction and Cl_2 was slowly added until an intense HOCl signal was observed. As the reaction conditions favoured excess H_2O, an intense first PE band of H_2O was always observed in the spectra. However, this is not a problem when recording PE spectra for HOCl as the bands of interest are lower in ionisation energy than those of H_2O and as a result the first two bands of HOCl are not overlapped by H_2O. However removal of H_2O from the PE spectrum is important when recording the PE spectrum of Cl_2O, as the third and fourth PE bands of Cl_2O which occur at 12.65 eV and 12.79 eV are heavily overlapped by the first PE band of H_2O which occurs at 12.62 eV. Therefore a method was developed to record the PE spectrum of Cl_2O by trapping H_2O, after the reaction, to prevent it reaching the ionisation region of the spectrometer. This was achieved using a U-tube as part of the inlet system, which was positioned on the end of the column.

The U-tube was immersed in a crushed ice/salt mixture which trapped H_2O after the reaction preventing any excess, unreacted H_2O from reaching the ionisation region of the spectrometer. The set-up shown as inlet (C) in Figure 9.4, along with the cold trap, produced relatively clean PE spectra of Cl_2O. HOCl and H_2O were not observed in the recorded PE spectra and only a small contribution of excess Cl_2 was observed. Cl_2O spectra could be recorded for upwards of 6 hours using this trapping method so long as the low temperature required in the cold trap was maintained. When recording the PE
A Study of Selected Triatomics

spectrum of Cl₂O, H₂O was the first reagent admitted to the column and after a few minutes Cl₂ was gradually introduced. This was found to provide the optimum reaction conditions (this protocol was also adopted when recording HOCl spectra). This method was reproducible over a sufficiently long period of time as spectra were obtained over a 6 hour period. Figure 9.6 shows the PE spectrum of Cl₂O obtained with this method after 6 hours of continuous reaction. The absence of HOCl suggests that the small amounts of H₂O used and the large amounts of HgO in the column greatly increase the rate of formation of Cl₂O, whilst limiting the formation of HOCl. In all experimental methods it was found that gradually adding H₂O to the inlet before introducing Cl₂ provided the optimum reaction conditions. All reactions were performed at room temperature.

![Figure 9.6: PE spectrum of Cl₂O also showing the first band of Cl₂. The experiment was performed using method (C) shown in Figure 9.4, with trapping of excess H₂O (see text).](image)

9.7 Conclusion

HOCl and Cl₂O have both been observed by PES using the column method by flowing Cl₂ saturated in H₂O vapour through successive layers of dried HgO powder as
described in method (C). As a result of this work, the recommended methods for producing HOCl and Cl₂O for TPES measurements at Elettra are as follows:

For HOCl production, the column was packed as shown in Figure 9.4, inlet (C). The column was then coupled to the spectrometer using a water cooled flange and heated for upwards of 2 hours to a temperature of 300 °C using heating tape to remove any species which may have adsorbed on the HgO during the preparation of the column. The heating tape was removed and the column was left to cool to room temperature. Once the column was at room temperature, H₂O was slowly admitted until the flow conditions stabilised (usually this was after a few minutes). Cl₂ was then gradually added to the column. PE spectra were recorded as Cl₂ was admitted to the column to monitor the production of HOCl. Once an intense HOCl PE spectrum was obtained the conditions were noted and PE spectra were recorded every 15 mins for upwards of 4 hours. It was found from pressure measurements that a [H₂O]:[Cl₂] ratio of ~2:1 provided the optimum and most consistent conditions for recording HOCl over a 4-6 hour period.

The recommended method used to produce Cl₂O for TPES measurements at Elettra followed the HOCl method, in that the same packing regime was used and the column was pre-heated for ~2 hours to a temperature of 300°C using heating tape. Once the heating tape was removed and the inlet had cooled to ambient temperature, H₂O was gradually admitted. Once a steady flow of H₂O had been established, Cl₂ was then slowly introduced. PE spectra were then recorded as the Cl₂ was admitted to monitor the reaction products. When HOCl was observed in the spectra, the flow rate of H₂O was reduced and the Cl₂ flow-rate was increased until HOCl was no longer the dominant reaction product in the spectra with Cl₂O being the most intense species observed. It was found that the reagent partial pressures used to achieve an intense PE spectrum of Cl₂O were, in contrast to those used for HOCl production, in the ratio [H₂O]:[Cl₂] ~1:2.

Spectra recorded using this technique are shown as (A) and (B) in Figure 9.7. The PE spectrum (A), shown in Figure 9.7, was recorded after approximately 3 hours reaction time and the spectrum shown as (B) was recorded after 4 hours reaction time. Although H₂O was required during the reaction in order to produce Cl₂O, it was only required in minimal amounts, unlike HOCl where H₂O was required to be in excess to obtain
favourable results. When recording PE spectra, for both HOCl and Cl₂O, Cl₂ was always observed in small amounts.

Figure 9.7: PE spectra of Cl₂O showing the vibrational structure of the first band of HOCl and Cl₂. Spectrum (A) was recorded after 3 hours and Spectrum (B) was recorded after approximately 4 hours. PE spectra were obtained using a [H₂O]:[Cl₂] ratio of ~1:2.
In order to record a clean PE spectrum of Cl\textsubscript{2}O in Southampton, a cold trap was used in order to remove excess H\textsubscript{2}O from the spectrum (as the first band of H\textsubscript{2}O and third and fourth bands of Cl\textsubscript{2}O overlap at an ionisation energy of around 12.6 eV as shown in Figure 9.7) in order to observe four Cl\textsubscript{2}O PE bands, as shown in Figure 9.6. However using a cold trap in this way is not advisable for experiments in Elettra as a leak may cause problems with the synchrotron storage ring. The first two bands of Cl\textsubscript{2}O occur in the same ionisation region as the first two bands of HOCl. However, by adjusting the reagent mixing ratios, as mentioned above, conditions should be obtained in which HOCl or Cl\textsubscript{2}O can be suitably resolved by TPES. The methods developed in this work will provide a good starting point for recording TPE spectra of HOCl and Cl\textsubscript{2}O at the Elettra synchrotron source, which is the next step in this project.
References

A Study of Selected Triatomics


Chapter 10

A Determination of the Photolysis Rate Coefficient of Monochlorodimethyl Sulphide (CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl) in the Atmosphere

Dimethylsulphide (DMS, CH$_3$SCH$_3$) is a naturally emitted compound produced as a by-product from the biodegradation of organosulphur compounds from phytoplankton throughout the marine environment. It is predicted that 10-50 Mtons of DMS are emitted annually into the atmosphere via this pathway. The presence of DMS in maritime air was first demonstrated in 1972 by Lovelock et al. using gas-chromatography with a flame photometric detector [1]. Current estimates show that DMS contributes between 20-30% of the total global sulphur budget and is the single largest source of atmospheric sulphur in the southern hemisphere [2]. Oxidation of DMS is the main reaction process in the atmosphere which leads to the production of oxidised sulphur compounds, particularly sulphur dioxide (SO$_2$), methanesulphonic acid (MSA) (CH$_3$SO$_3$H), dimethylsulphoxide (DMSO) ((CH$_3$)$_2$SO), methylsulphonymethane ((CH$_3$)$_2$SO$_2$) and sulphuric acid (H$_2$SO$_4$) [3, 4, 5], which serve as cloud condensation nuclei (CCN), contributing to the natural acidity of precipitation. DMS oxidation is also thought to provide a negative feedback mechanism to the Earth's radiative balance. This was first proposed by Charlson, Lovelock, Andreae and Warren and is known as the CLAW hypothesis [6]. It is for this reason that DMS removal processes in the atmosphere have been the subject of numerous investigations over the
years. There have been many field and laboratory studies involving DMS oxidation in the last decade [7, 8, 9], although there are still considerable uncertainties concerning the oxidation of DMS in the atmosphere [10]. It appears from field studies that DMS oxidation in the atmosphere is more rapid than can be accounted for using existing models: notably, the production of SO$_2$ (assumed to be derived from DMS) is more rapid than expected. The dominant oxidant for DMS was first considered to be the OH radical with evidence that the NO$_3$ radical is an important oxidant at night in coastal areas [11]; the significance of NO$_3$ in open ocean areas is thought to be very small. Modelling studies using oxidation of DMS with OH gives rise to lower levels of SO$_2$ than actually observed and oxidation of DMS with halogens has been suggested as a way of increasing the computed SO$_2$ yields.

The rate coefficient of the reaction, DMS + Cl$_2$ → Products, has been measured in the Southampton PES group with the discharge flow method (see Chapter 3 for details) as $(3.4 \pm 0.7) \times 10^{-14}$ cm$^3$ molecules$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ at $(294 \pm 2)$ K using a flow-tube interfaced to a PE spectrometer [12, 13]. The reaction products from this reaction were CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl and HCl. This work has shown that although the interaction between DMS and Cl$_2$ is moderately slow, it is of significance as it ultimately leads to extra SO$_2$ in the atmosphere. There are field observations which show that Cl$_2$ levels can reach 150 ppt at night [14]. If it is assumed that the average Cl$_2$ level at night is 50 ppt then the lifetime of DMS with respect to reaction with Cl$_2$ is expected to be approximately 6 hours. Shallcross et al. [15] estimate that the average DMS level is 50 ppt at night (field measurements suggest that this is perfectly reasonable in the southern ocean for example) and that the DMS and Cl$_2$ levels are replenished at night, maintaining these levels over a 6 hour period, around 40 ppt of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl would be generated (this is assuming that CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl does not react and simply builds up) at night. In the morning, photolysis of Cl$_2$ will be rapid and the reaction of DMS + Cl$_2$ → products will be ineffective, as Cl$_2$ levels fall rapidly as Cl$_2$ is photolysed. Therefore CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl, which has built up during the night, can either react with OH or be photolysed. The relative rates of these processes are unknown. However, both routes are expected to ultimately lead to SO$_2$ production. Therefore the night-time interaction between DMS and Cl$_2$ may well provide a mechanism to speed up SO$_2$ production rates during the day and go some way towards explaining the discrepancy between observed and computed
SO$_2$ production rates during the day. The main issue addressed in this chapter is: what are the lifetimes of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl with respect to photolysis and reaction with OH?

The lifetime of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl with respect to reaction with OH can be estimated because the rate coefficient of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl + OH has been measured with the discharge-flow kinetic technique using resonance fluorescence to measure the relative concentration of OH as a function of time on reaction with CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl. The rate coefficient obtained was $(2.5 \pm 1.3) \times 10^{-12}$ cm$^3$ molecules$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$. In this work an estimate was also made of the room temperature rate coefficient of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl + Cl as $1 \times 10^{-10}$ cm$^3$ molecules$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ (estimated from known rate coefficients of Cl and OH reactions with related molecules with the known CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl + OH rate coefficient) [15-20]. Assuming average values of [OH] = $1 \times 10^6$ molecules cm$^{-3}$ and [Cl] = $1 \times 10^5$ molecules cm$^{-3}$ in the marine boundary layer [21], lifetimes of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl with respect to reaction with [OH] and [Cl] were calculated as 4.6 and 1.2 days respectively. This was determined as $1/k[X]$ where $X = [OH]$ or [Cl]. It is therefore important to estimate the lifetime of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl with respect to photolysis and compare it with the estimated lifetimes of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl with respect to reaction with OH and Cl are known. This is the main objective of this chapter.

The production of SO$_2$ from photolysis of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl is thought to arise from the following reactions, which are initiated by photodissociation of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl, i.e.

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} + hv \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S} + \text{CH}_2\text{Cl} \quad (10.1a)
\]

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{S} + \text{NO}_2 (\text{O}_3) \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SO}_2 + \text{NO} (\text{O}_2) \quad (10.2)
\]

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SO}_2 + hv \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{SO}_2 \quad (10.3)
\]

It is thought that the C-S bond cleaves, producing CH$_3$S and CH$_2$Cl from reaction (10.1a). CH$_3$S is then oxidised by O$_3$ and/or NO$_2$ in the atmosphere to form CH$_3$SO$_2$. This produces SO$_2$ on photolysis and/or from thermal decomposition during the day. Other dissociative routes for CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl which must also be considered on photolysis are,

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} + hv \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \quad (10.1b)
\]

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} + hv \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2 + \text{Cl} \quad (10.1c)
\]
Photolysis of CH₃SCH₂Cl

It would be very valuable to determine (i) if CH₃SCH₂Cl is dissociative on photoexcitation in the atmosphere and, if so (ii) which photolysis channel is the dominant photodissociation channel. If the photolysis rate coefficient can be determined from the electronic absorption spectrum of CH₃SCH₂Cl, the photolysis lifetime of CH₃SCH₂Cl can be determined and compared to the lifetimes of CH₃SCH₂Cl for the reactions CH₃SCH₂Cl + OH and CH₃SCH₂Cl + Cl. This would then determine the main channel for SO₂ production in the atmosphere from CH₃SCH₂Cl.

In this work ultraviolet (UV) absorption spectroscopy has been used to record the absorption spectrum of CH₃SCH₂Cl in the solar actinic region at known sample pressures. This then allowed photoabsorption cross-sections to be obtained in the actinic region. This information has been used with the known actinic solar flux to calculate the photolysis rate coefficient, on the assumption that photodissociation occurs in the actinic region.

10.1 Experimental

All experimental measurements reported in this chapter were conducted at the Molecular Spectroscopy Facility at the Rutherford Appleton Laboratories (RAL) using a Bruker IFS 66v/S Fourier Transform Spectrometer (FTS). This spectrometer provides a spectral coverage from the infrared to the near-ultraviolet region, i.e. 500 cm⁻¹ (20,000 nm) to 50,000 cm⁻¹ (200 nm), and has a maximum unapodized resolution of 0.12 cm⁻¹.

In this spectrometer a collimated beam of radiation, with a diameter of 25 mm, reflected from a gold-coated 90° off-axis parabolic mirror (focal length 121 mm) inside the FTS, is directed through a KBr optical window into an evacuated stainless-steel tube connected to the cell. The KBr window allows the transmission of radiation over a wide spectral range from 500 cm⁻¹ to 50,000 cm⁻¹. The optical beam is transmitted through the cell towards another KBr window where it enters an evacuated tube connected to a vacuum chamber which contains the detector. The chamber can contain up to three detectors at any one time and the optical beam can be remotely steered onto each of the detectors using a second gold-coated 90° off-axis parabolic mirror (focal length 43 mm) which images the collimated beam onto the detector elements.

For the u.v.-visible experiments a xenon lamp was used as the source which covers the range (50,000 cm⁻¹ to 18,000cm⁻¹). This was replaced with a glowing filament made of
silicon carbide (SiC) for the infrared measurements. A photomultiplier was used as the detector for the u.v. visible experiments with two different detectors used for the IR experiments; an indium antimonide (InSb) detector, which is suitable over the energy region 1800-6000 cm\(^{-1}\) and a mercury cadmium telluride (MCT) detector for covering the energy region 500-8000 cm\(^{-1}\).

The CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl sample (liquid) used in this work was obtained from a commercial source (Aldrich > 95%). The liquid sample was admitted to a glass ampule which was coupled to the reaction cell of the FTS (two reaction cells were used in this work; for the UV measurements a cell with a path length of (0.228 ± 0.002) m was used and for the infrared measurements a cell with a path length of (1.030 ± 0.002) m was used). The freeze-pump-thaw method was used to degas and improve the purity of the sample on a vacuum line before admitting the sample to the cell. CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl vapour was then admitted to the cell using a needle valve. Pressures inside the cell were measured using a baratron pressure gauge.

Absolute photoabsorption cross-sections were obtained (at known wavelength), using the Beer-Lambert law,

\[
I = I_0 \exp(-\sigma l c)
\]  

(10.4a)

where \(I\) is the radiation intensity transmitted through the gas sample, \(I_0\) is the incident radiation intensity on the cell, \(l\) is the absorption path length, \(c\) is the molecular number density of the sample and \(\sigma\) is the absolute photoabsorption cross-section. This can be re-written for absorbance as,

\[
Absorbance (Abs) = \ln \left( \frac{I_0}{I} \right) = \sigma l c
\]  

(10.4b)

The experimental error in the photoabsorption cross-sections measured in this work is estimated at (± 5%).

10.2 Computational Details

Electronic structure calculations were performed by Dr E. P. F. Lee of the Southampton PES group in support of this experimental work. The results are included here for completeness.
Photolysis of \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \)

Geometry optimisation and harmonic frequency calculations were carried out for the dissociation products, \( \text{CH}_3\text{S}, \text{CH}_2\text{Cl}, \text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \) and \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2 \) from the photolysis reactions (10.1a), (10.1b) and (10.1c), using the Gaussian09 suite of programs [22], employing the time dependent density functional theory (TD-DFT) method and the MP2 method with the B3LYP functional. Single energy calculations for improved relative electronic energies were performed at the RHF/UCCSD(T) level using the MOLPRO program [23]. All single energy higher level calculations have employed the MP2/6-311++G** geometries. At the RHF/UCCSD(T)/F-12x (\( x = a \) or \( b \)) level, the VTZ-F12 and the VQZ-F12 basis sets, which have been optimised for F12 calculations, have been used together with corresponding default RI (F12 optimised) and DF basis sets as implemented by MOLPRO. AVTZ and AVQZ quality basis sets were used with the RCCSD(T) method, which employed the aug-cc-pV(X+d)Z basis sets for S and Cl atoms. The complete basis set (CBS) limit values of the reaction energies were obtained using the \( 1/X^3 \) extrapolation formula. Reaction enthalpies were evaluated within the rigid rotor harmonic oscillator model using computed MP2 geometries and vibrational frequencies.

10.3 Results and Discussion

10.3.1 The UV Absorption Spectrum of \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \)

Absorption spectra were recorded of \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \) at four different pressures, 0.80, 1.25, 1.60 and 2.00 mbar, over the range 28,000 cm\(^{-1} \) to 50,000 cm\(^{-1} \) using a cell of path length \((0.228 \pm 0.002)\) m. As far as is known no electronic absorption spectra of \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \) have been reported before this work.

The UV absorption spectra of \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \) are shown in Figure 10.1 (top). They show two main absorption bands, a weak absorption band, observed between 30,000 cm\(^{-1} \) and 38,000 cm\(^{-1} \), and a second, much larger, absorption band observed from 38,000 cm\(^{-1} \) to 45,000 cm\(^{-1} \). The lower spectrum in Figure 10.1 shows the first, weaker, absorption band of \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \) more clearly. The first absorption band has an onset at \((28,000 \pm 100)\) cm\(^{-1} \) and a band maximum at \((34,500 \pm 100)\) cm\(^{-1} \). The larger absorption band has a measured band maximum of \((42,800 \pm 50)\) cm\(^{-1} \). The first absorption band overlaps the region of the solar actinic flux (shown in red in Figure 10.1).
Figure 10.1: The UV absorption spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl recorded at four different pressures showing the absorption in the actinic flux region (shown in red in the upper spectrum). The bottom spectra show the first absorption band at each pressure recorded. The cell path length used to obtain these spectra was $(0.228 \pm 0.002)$ m.
The solar actinic flux is the intensity of radiation in a given wavelength window (usually given as the sum over 5 nm) available to molecules at a particular height in the atmosphere. Solar actinic flux values, listed in reference [24], have been plotted for the solar zenith angles (SZA) of, 0°, 10°, 20°, 30°, 40°, 50°, 60°, 70°, 78° and 86°, over the range 14,000 cm\(^{-1}\) to 34,000 cm\(^{-1}\), and are shown in Figure 10.2 (the SZA is defined with respect to the earth’s surface; 0° means directly above).

![Figure 10.2: Solar actinic solar flux values determined at different solar zenith angles over the range 14,000cm\(^{-1}\) to 34,000cm\(^{-1}\) plotted as a function of wavenumber [24].](image)

Solar actinic flux values in the region of interest, i.e. the region which overlaps with the first absorption band seen in the recorded UV spectrum of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl, which is \textit{ca.} 28,000 cm\(^{-1}\) to \textit{ca.} 34,200 cm\(^{-1}\) or 290 nm to 355nm, (see Figure 10.1) will be used in order to determine the photolysis rate coefficient of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl.

Photoabsorption cross-sections of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl, calculated from recorded UV absorption spectra, were used along with the solar actinic flux values taken from the literature [24] and quantum yields of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl, to determine its photolysis rate coefficient and hence photolysis lifetime in the atmosphere. This involved taking experimental absorbance values, ln(\(I_0/I\)), at each wavenumber value, with known values of \(l\) and \(c\) to determine \(\sigma\), the photoabsorption cross-section. In order to determine photoabsorption
cross-sections of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl at a known wavelength, ($\lambda$), equation 10.4b can be rearranged to give,

$$
\sigma_{MCIDMS}(\lambda) = \frac{Abs}{l \cdot c}
$$

(10.5)

Using the known photoabsorption cross-sections at each wavelength, using equation 10.5, the photolysis rate coefficient, $J_{(MCIDMS)}$, can be calculated using equation 10.6,

$$
J_{(MCIDMS)} = \int_{\lambda_A}^{\lambda_B} F(\lambda)\sigma_{MCIDMS}(\lambda)\Phi(\lambda) \, d\lambda
$$

(10.6)

where $F(\lambda)$ is the spherically integrated actinic solar photon flux at the earth’s surface for a given wavelength, $\sigma_{MCIDMS}(\lambda)$ is the photoabsorption cross-section determined at known ($\lambda$) from equation 10.5 and $\Phi(\lambda)$ is the absolute quantum yield of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl (assumed to be unity in this work). To evaluate equation 10.6, $J_{(MCIDMS)}$ was approximated as a sum of $F(\lambda)\sigma_{MCIDMS}(\lambda)\Phi(\lambda)$ in small wavelength intervals over the wavelength range (ca. 28,000 cm$^{-1}$ to ca. 34,000 cm$^{-1}$ or 290 nm to 355nm). To determine the photolysis rate coefficient equation 10.6 then becomes,

$$
J_{(MCIDMS)} = \sum_{290}^{355} F(\lambda)\sigma_{MCIDMS}(\lambda)\Phi(\lambda)
$$

(10.7)

Inspection of equation 10.4b shows that absorbance must scale linearly with molecular number density. To check this, absorbance values were measured at different wavenumber values for the first and second absorption bands and plotted as a function of pressure. Wavenumber values chosen for the first absorption band were 32,000 cm$^{-1}$, 34,000 cm$^{-1}$ and 36,000 cm$^{-1}$. Wavenumber values chosen for the second absorption band were 41,000 cm$^{-1}$, 42,000 cm$^{-1}$ and 43,000 cm$^{-1}$.

Absorbance values plotted as a function of pressure are shown in Figure 10.3. Absorbance values at 32,000 cm$^{-1}$ and 34,000 cm$^{-1}$ were chosen as these values reside within the solar actinic flux region. Wavenumber values are shown to scale linearly with pressure obeying the Beer-Lambert relationship (Figure 10.3). Error bars are shown for uncertainties in measured absorbance and pressure. An uncertainty of (± 0.2) mbar is used for pressure and (± 0.01) is used for measured absorbance values in both linear plots.
Figure 10.3: Absorbance values determined from UV absorption spectra of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl for the first and second absorption bands (upper and lower plots respectively) plotted against pressure.
Photolysis of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl

It can be seen from the plots shown in Figure 10.3 that for the first band (upper plot) the linear fits can be extrapolated back to intercept the origin. It is observed for the second absorption band (lower plot) that the linear fits for each wavenumber value do not go through the origin; however, given the error bars involved, notably in the pressure ($\pm$ 0.2) mbar, this was not considered a serious problem.

Photoabsorption cross-sections were determined in 5 nm bins from 290 nm to 355 nm (28,369 cm$^{-1}$ to 34,188 cm$^{-1}$) as $F(\lambda)$ values are listed as a total per 5 nm bin in reference [24]. The results are shown in Table 10.1.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Wavelength (nm)</th>
<th>Wavenumber (cm$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Photoabsorption Cross-Sections (cm$^2$) ($\pm$ 5%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>290 to 295</td>
<td>34483 to 33898</td>
<td>$(4.78 \pm 0.24) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>295 to 300</td>
<td>33898 to 33333</td>
<td>$(4.30 \pm 0.21) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300 to 305</td>
<td>33333 to 32787</td>
<td>$(3.74 \pm 0.19) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>305 to 310</td>
<td>32787 to 32258</td>
<td>$(3.21 \pm 0.16) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>310 to 315</td>
<td>32258 to 31746</td>
<td>$(2.73 \pm 0.14) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>315 to 320</td>
<td>31746 to 31250</td>
<td>$(2.30 \pm 0.11) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>320 to 325</td>
<td>31250 to 30769</td>
<td>$(1.90 \pm 0.95) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>325 to 330</td>
<td>30769 to 30303</td>
<td>$(1.53 \pm 0.77) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>330 to 335</td>
<td>30303 to 29851</td>
<td>$(1.21 \pm 0.60) \times 10^{20}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>335 to 340</td>
<td>29851 to 29412</td>
<td>$(0.97 \pm 0.46) \times 10^{21}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>340 to 345</td>
<td>29412 to 28986</td>
<td>$(0.65 \pm 0.33) \times 10^{21}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>345 to 350</td>
<td>28986 to 28571</td>
<td>$(0.49 \pm 0.21) \times 10^{21}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>350 to 355</td>
<td>28571 to 34188</td>
<td>$(0.20 \pm 0.11) \times 10^{21}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 10.1: Photoabsorption cross-sections calculated in 5 nm bins from absorption spectra of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl.

The sum of the $J_{\text{(MCIDMS)}}$ values over the entire wavelength range (290 nm to 355 nm) yields the photolysis rate coefficient at ground level for a given SZA, using equation 10.7, at each pressure measured. It must be noted that solar actinic flux values used in the determination of the CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl photolysis rate coefficient have been determined for the earth’s surface i.e. approximately a few metres above ground level and that each actinic flux value used per 5 nm bin is a summation of actinic fluxes over that wavelength interval [24].

The photoabsorption cross-sections, shown in Table 10.1, were used in equation 10.7 to determine the photolysis rate coefficient of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl at each SZA. As photodissociation of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl is a first order process, the photolysis rate coefficients at a given SZA can be used to determine the photolysis lifetime ($t_{1/2}$) of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl at the corresponding SZA using equation 10.8.
Photolysis of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$

$$t_{1/2} = \frac{1}{k}$$  \hspace{1cm} (10.8)

where $k$ is the photolysis rate coefficient of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$ determined from equation 10.8. For a first order reaction process, $\ln(2)/k$ should be used to determine $(t/2)$ values, however $1/k$ is used here purely to provide an estimate and to be consistent with the equation used to determine the photolysis lifetimes with respect to OH and Cl reactions. The photolysis rate coefficients at each SZA and photolysis lifetimes of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$ are given in Table 10.2.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Solar Zenith Angle</th>
<th>Rate Coefficient (sec$^{-1}$) (± 5%)</th>
<th>Photolysis Lifetime ($t_{1/2}$) (hours)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0°</td>
<td>$(7.67 \pm 0.38) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>3.62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10°</td>
<td>$(7.57 \pm 0.38) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>3.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20°</td>
<td>$(7.23 \pm 0.36) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>3.84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30°</td>
<td>$(6.65 \pm 0.33) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>4.17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40°</td>
<td>$(5.83 \pm 0.29) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>4.77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50°</td>
<td>$(4.72 \pm 0.24) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>5.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60°</td>
<td>$(3.36 \pm 0.17) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>8.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70°</td>
<td>$(1.85 \pm 0.92) \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>15.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>78°</td>
<td>$(7.77 \pm 0.39) \times 10^{-6}$</td>
<td>35.76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>86°</td>
<td>$(1.50 \pm 0.08) \times 10^{-6}$</td>
<td>185.06</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 10.2: Photolysis rate coefficients determined in this work for $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$ at different solar zenith angles. Photolysis lifetimes of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$ have been estimated using $1/k$.

It is clear from the results shown in Table 10.2 that, during the day, where the photon flux is at its most intense, at ground level at SZA values of 0° to 30°, the photolysis rate of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$ is at its highest, with rate coefficients in the range $6.79 \times 10^{-5}$ to $7.83 \times 10^{-5}$ sec$^{-1}$ with an expected photolysis lifetime in the range of a few hours (ca. 3-4 hours). A further increase in SZA shows the lifetime to increase from 5 to 10 hours with photolysis rate coefficients decreasing from $5.95 \times 10^{-5}$ to $1.88 \times 10^{-5}$ sec$^{-1}$. The photolysis rate decreases significantly at higher zenith angles of 78° and 86°, which would correspond to sunset, (where the solar actinic flux is at its lowest), with determined rate coefficients of $7.92 \times 10^{-6}$ and $1.53 \times 10^{-6}$ sec$^{-1}$ respectively. Photolysis lifetimes at these angles have been determined to be from approximately > 1 day to > 7 days. It is evident that the photolysis rate coefficients decrease with increasing SZA and the photolysis lifetime of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$ increases with increasing SZA. Photolysis rate coefficients determined in this work, plotted as a function of SZA, are shown in Figure 10.4. Solar actinic flux values used in this work are given in Table 10.3. From the calculations it shows that apart from when the sun is low in the sky, at zenith angles greater than
approximately 70°, the lifetime of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl with respect to photolysis is much lower than the lifetime with respect to reaction with OH and Cl.

\[ \text{Photolysis of CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} \]

**Figure 10.4:** Photolysis rate coefficients determined in this work, from photoabsorption cross-section measurements, plotted as a function of solar zenith angle (see Table 10.2 for errors associated with determine rate coefficients).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Wavenumber (cm$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>0</th>
<th>10</th>
<th>20</th>
<th>30</th>
<th>40</th>
<th>50</th>
<th>60</th>
<th>70</th>
<th>78</th>
<th>86</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>34483 to 33898</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33898 to 33333</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33333 to 32787</td>
<td>398</td>
<td>381</td>
<td>331</td>
<td>255</td>
<td>167</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32787 to 32258</td>
<td>1410</td>
<td>1370</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>1050</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>513</td>
<td>244</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32258 to 31746</td>
<td>3140</td>
<td>3100</td>
<td>2910</td>
<td>2580</td>
<td>2130</td>
<td>1560</td>
<td>922</td>
<td>357</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31746 to 31250</td>
<td>4350</td>
<td>4310</td>
<td>4100</td>
<td>3740</td>
<td>3210</td>
<td>2520</td>
<td>1670</td>
<td>793</td>
<td>264</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31250 to 30769</td>
<td>5480</td>
<td>5410</td>
<td>5190</td>
<td>4800</td>
<td>4230</td>
<td>3430</td>
<td>2430</td>
<td>1290</td>
<td>502</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30769 to 30303</td>
<td>7890</td>
<td>7790</td>
<td>7510</td>
<td>7010</td>
<td>6270</td>
<td>5210</td>
<td>3830</td>
<td>2170</td>
<td>928</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30303 to 29851</td>
<td>8350</td>
<td>8250</td>
<td>7980</td>
<td>7500</td>
<td>6760</td>
<td>5720</td>
<td>4300</td>
<td>2540</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29851 to 29412</td>
<td>8240</td>
<td>8160</td>
<td>7910</td>
<td>7460</td>
<td>6780</td>
<td>5790</td>
<td>4430</td>
<td>2690</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29412 to 28986</td>
<td>8890</td>
<td>8800</td>
<td>8540</td>
<td>8090</td>
<td>7380</td>
<td>6360</td>
<td>4930</td>
<td>3040</td>
<td>1440</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28986 to 28571</td>
<td>8870</td>
<td>8790</td>
<td>8540</td>
<td>8110</td>
<td>7430</td>
<td>6440</td>
<td>5040</td>
<td>3150</td>
<td>1510</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28571 to 34188</td>
<td>10050</td>
<td>9960</td>
<td>9700</td>
<td>9220</td>
<td>8480</td>
<td>7390</td>
<td>5830</td>
<td>3690</td>
<td>1770</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 10.3:** Solar actinic flux values ($\times 10^3$, cm$^{-2}$ sec$^{-1}$) calculated at the earth’s surface, in reference [24], as a function of wavenumber and solar zenith angle, for best estimated surface albedos. Each value is given as the sum over a 5 nm wavelength window.
10.3.2 The Infrared Absorption Spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl

Infrared absorption spectra were recorded of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl at five different pressures, 0.5, 1.0, 3.0, 5.0 and 10.0 mbar in the range 400 cm$^{-1}$ to 4,000 cm$^{-1}$ using a cell of path length (1.030 ± 0.002) m.

CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl is a non-linear molecule with 9 atoms and 21 vibrational modes. The vibrational wavenumber values and intensities, computed for the optimised geometry at the MP2/6-311** level, are shown in Table 10.4. A description of each normal mode is also given in Table 10.4. The computed infrared spectrum is shown in Figure 10.5 where each absorption is represented using a Lorentz function with a half-width of 5 cm$^{-1}$. The experimental infrared absorption spectrum, shown in Figure 10.6 (top), shows 17 major infrared bands, labelled A-J. Absorption bands E, F, H and J show grouped absorption bands, shown in Figure 10.6 (bottom), and have been labelled E$_{1-2}$, F$_{1-2}$, H$_{1-3}$ and J$_{1-4}$. A total of 17 infrared bands are observed from the spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl. The spectrum shown in Figure 10.6 was recorded at room temperature and at a pressure of 5.0 mbar.

![Figure 10.5: Infrared spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl computed at the MP2/6-311** level.](image)
Figure 10.6: The infrared absorption spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl recorded at a pressure of 5.0 mbar.
Experimental infrared absorption bands (labelled A-J, shown in Figure 10.6) have been compared with the vibrational wavenumbers and absolute intensities of the calculated spectrum and are shown in Table 10.4.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Mode</th>
<th>Calculated</th>
<th>Experimental</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wavenumber (cm(^{-1}))</td>
<td>Intensity (km.mol(^{-1}))</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>0.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>159</td>
<td>0.62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>186</td>
<td>0.26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>298</td>
<td>0.63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>751</td>
<td>4.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>767</td>
<td>2.37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>830</td>
<td>37.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>911</td>
<td>3.71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>1008</td>
<td>7.93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>1009</td>
<td>8.85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>1175</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>1318</td>
<td>57.69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>1.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>1471</td>
<td>9.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>1482</td>
<td>1.73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>1501</td>
<td>7.56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>3081</td>
<td>27.72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>3115</td>
<td>19.86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>3173</td>
<td>16.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>3183</td>
<td>1.09</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>3191</td>
<td>4.79</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 10.4: Vibrational wavenumbers calculated at the MP2/6-311G** level for CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl compared with the corresponding values for the absorption bands from the experimental infrared spectrum of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl.

Reasonable agreement is observed between the experimental and computed infrared spectra of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl. Intense absorption bands are observed for C-H\(_2\) wagging and Cl-C-S stretching at 1318 cm\(^{-1}\) and 830 cm\(^{-1}\) in the calculated spectrum with the corresponding experimental infrared absorption bands observed at (1229.47 ± 0.50) cm\(^{-1}\) and (756.65 ± 0.50) cm\(^{-1}\).
In order to show that absorbance scales linearly with molecular number density, absorbance values were measured at different wavenumber values, 836 cm\(^{-1}\) (D), 1411 cm\(^{-1}\) (H\(_1\)) and 2933 cm\(^{-1}\) (J\(_1\)) and plotted as a function of pressure. Absorbance values plotted as a function of pressure are shown in Figure 10.7.

![Figure 10.7: Absorbance values determined from infrared absorption spectra of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl at the wavenumber values of 836 cm\(^{-1}\), 1411 cm\(^{-1}\) and 2933 cm\(^{-1}\) plotted against pressure.](image)

Wavenumber values are shown to scale linearly with pressure obeying the Beer-Lambert relationship. Error bars are shown for uncertainties in measured absorbance and pressure. An uncertainty of (± 0.2) mbar is used for pressure and an uncertainty of (± 0.01) is used for measured absorbance values.

Infrared photoabsorption cross-sections were determined in this work, the same way as those described above for UV photoabsorption cross-sections, for the 17 key absorptions (A to J), shown in Figure 10.6. However, photoabsorption cross-sections were not used for any further analysis of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl. The infrared photoabsorption cross-sections of CH\(_3\)SCH\(_2\)Cl are given in Table 10.5.
Table 10.5: Photoabsorption cross-sections determined from infrared absorption spectra of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl.

Infrared cross-section data are important in atmospheric chemistry as they allow for improved retrieval and quantification of certain species which are monitored at various heights in the atmosphere. Knowing where these species are in the atmosphere and having the ability to quantify them, i.e. to determine number densities or concentration profiles, is invaluable for atmospheric chemistry. Also infrared spectra with known photoabsorption cross-sections can be used to determine the global warming potentials (GWP) for a given species.

Global warming potentials of greenhouse gases depend on the number of absorption bands in the infrared region, the intensity of those bands and more importantly the position of the absorption bands. Several studies have been carried out to determine radiative efficiencies and global warming potentials of greenhouse gases using measured infrared absorption cross-sections [25, 26, 27].

The radiative efficiency is an experimentally determined quantity derived from the radiative forcing, which is the amount of energy per unit area per unit time that a greenhouse gas absorbs, of a species along with its infrared photoabsorption cross-sections. The global warming potential, which is the radiative forcing capacity of the greenhouse gas weighted by its atmospheric lifetime, of a given species can be determined using the radiative efficiencies [28, 29, 30].
10.3.3 Heat of Formation ($\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$) of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl

In order to calculate the bond energies associated with the photolysis processes (10.1a), (10.1b) and (10.1c), the heat of formation ($\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$) of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl is required. The experimental $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl has been determined in this work using values taken from the literature. Dissociation energies ($D_0$) of CH$_3$SCH$_3$ and CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl have been calculated for CH$_3$SCH$_3$ $\rightarrow$ CH$_3$SCH$_2$ + H and CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl $\rightarrow$ CH$_3$SCH$_2$ + Cl (photolysis channel (10.1c)) to be (91.8 ± 0.2) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ and (72.0 ± 0.6) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ respectively [31]. These values were obtained by photoionisation mass spectroscopy (PIMS) [31] by measuring the IE of CH$_3$SCH$_3$ and the appearance energy of CH$_3$SCH$_2^+$ from,

$$\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2^+ + \text{H} + e^- \quad (10.9)$$

and by measuring the IE of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl and the appearance energy of CH$_3$SCH$_2^+$ from,

$$\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2^+ + \text{Cl} + e^- \quad (10.10)$$

Dissociation energies of the CH$_3$SCH$_2$ + H and the CH$_3$SCH$_2$ + Cl decomposition channels must therefore be,

$$D_A (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3) = \Delta H_f (\text{H}) + \Delta H_f (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2) - \Delta H_f (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3) \quad (10.11)$$

$$D_B (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}) = \Delta H_f (\text{Cl}) + \Delta H_f (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2) - \Delta H_f (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}) \quad (10.12)$$

The $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl can therefore be determined from,

$$(D_A - D_B) = (\text{H}) - (\text{Cl}) - (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3) + (\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}) \quad (10.13)$$

If the $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ are known for, H, Cl and CH$_3$SCH$_3$ then the $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl can be determined as $(D_A - D_B)$ is known [31]. Experimentally determined $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ values, H (52.1 ± 0.0014) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ [32], Cl (28.992 ± 0.002) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ [32] and CH$_3$SCH$_3$ (91.8 ± 0.2) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ [33] were used in (10.13) to determine the $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl as (-12.32 ± 1.00) kcal.mol$^{-1}$. The dissociation energies can then be calculated, using the $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ determined for CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl, for photolysis channels (10.1a) and (10.1b) using a similar methodology.

Of the three photolysis routes, experimental $\Delta H_{f, 298K}^\Theta$ of the reaction products from photolysis reaction (10.1a) are known and have been used in this work to determine its
dissociation energy. The dissociation energy of (10.1b) cannot be determined as no experimental $\Delta H_{f,298K}^\circ$ value was available for the photolysis product SCH$_2$Cl. This value has, however, been calculated by Dr E. P. F. Lee. The dissociation energy of (10.1c) has already been determined as (72.0 ± 0.6) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ in reference [31].

The $\Delta H_{f,298K}^\circ$ values used for photolysis products CH$_3$S and CH$_2$Cl of reaction (10.1a) were (29.87 ± 0.47) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ and (27.96 ± 0.74) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ respectively [34, 35, 36]. Using experimental $\Delta H_{f,298K}^\circ$ values quoted in the literature with the $\Delta H_{f,298K}^\circ$ of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl of (-12.32 ± 1.00) kcal.mol$^{-1}$, the dissociation energies of channel (10.1a) was determined as $D(S-C)$ (70.15 ± 2.2) kcal.mol$^{-1}$. Results of the available dissociation energies for (10.1a) and (10.1c) are compared with those computed by Dr E. P. F. Lee in Table 10.6.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Methods</th>
<th>Reaction (10.1a)</th>
<th>Reaction (10.1b)</th>
<th>Reaction (10.1c)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$\Delta E_e$</td>
<td>$\Delta E_{0K}$</td>
<td>$\Delta H_{298K}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B3LYP/6-31++G**</td>
<td>62.95</td>
<td>57.39</td>
<td>58.54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MP2/6-31++G**</td>
<td>70.09</td>
<td>64.76</td>
<td>65.82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F12a/VTZ-F12</td>
<td>73.52</td>
<td>68.24</td>
<td>69.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F12b/VTZ-F12</td>
<td>73.34</td>
<td>68.06</td>
<td>69.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F12a/VQZ-F12</td>
<td>73.44</td>
<td>68.16</td>
<td>69.23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F12b/VQZ-F12</td>
<td>73.35</td>
<td>68.07</td>
<td>69.13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/AVTZ</td>
<td>72.17</td>
<td>66.89</td>
<td>67.95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/AVQZ</td>
<td>73.06</td>
<td>67.78</td>
<td>68.85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RCCSD(T)/CBS</td>
<td>73.72</td>
<td>68.44</td>
<td>69.5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 10.6:** Computed reaction energies ($\Delta E_e$ and $\Delta E_{0K}$) and enthalpies ($\Delta H_{298K}$) in kcal.mol$^{-1}$ for reactions (10.1a), (10.1b) and (10.1c) obtained at different levels of calculations.

* This work.
* Reference [31].

In Table 10.6, the RCCSD(T)/CBS value of 69.50 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ compares well with (70.15 ± 0.22) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ for channel (10.1a) derived in this work and the RCCSD(T)/CBS value of 72.95 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ compares well with (72.0 ± 0.6) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ for channel (10.1c) obtained in reference [31] indicating that the computed reaction energy for (10.1b) (RCCSD(T)/CBS value of 74.91 kcal.mol$^{-1}$) is reliable to within (± 1.0) kcal.mol$^{-1}$. This provides strong evidence to suggest that on photolysis of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl the lowest energy dissociation channel involves cleavage of the CH$_3$S-CH$_2$Cl bond to give CH$_3$S + CH$_2$Cl.
10.3.4 Dissociation of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl in the Excited State

For absorption in the region 28,000 cm$^{-1}$ to 38,000 cm$^{-1}$ the excited state is likely to be dissociative or predissociative as (i) the onset of the band (28,000 ± 100) cm$^{-1}$ (80.06 ± 0.15) kcal.mol$^{-1}$ (see Figure 10.1) is above the expected dissociation energy of CH$_3$S-CH$_2$Cl bond ((70.15 ± 2.2) kcal.mol$^{-1}$) (see Table 10.6) and (ii) the first allowed absorption band in DMS, corresponding to the $a^1B_1 \leftarrow X^1A_1$ transition, is known to be predissociative [37, 38]. For DMS, the observed absorption bands, which are in the region 35,000 cm$^{-1}$ to 50,000 cm$^{-1}$ and higher, can be classified as members of valence-valence transitions, of the $n_s \rightarrow \sigma^*$ type, and valence-Rydberg transitions [39]. Nevertheless as the quantum yield for photodissociation of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl at wavelengths in the actinic region could be less than 1.0, the photodissociation rate coefficients determined in this work must be viewed as upper limits and the derived lifetime lower limits.

As can be seen from Figure 10.1, the absorption spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl shows a very weak band centred at (34,500 ± 100) cm$^{-1}$ and a stronger band centred at (42,800 ± 50) cm$^{-1}$. These bands were assigned on the basis of the results of the time-dependant density functional theory (TD-DFT) calculations shown in Table 10.7.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>States</th>
<th>Excitations</th>
<th>$f$</th>
<th>$\Delta$E$_{eq}$</th>
<th>Wavenumber (cm$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Optimisation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(1)$^3$A''</td>
<td>25→27, 0.587</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4.647</td>
<td>37475.81</td>
<td>Break S-CH$_3$Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(2)$^3$A''</td>
<td>25→26, 0.626</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4.977</td>
<td>40137.1</td>
<td>Break C-Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(1)$^1$A''</td>
<td>25→26, 0.630</td>
<td>0.0001</td>
<td>5.031</td>
<td>40572.58</td>
<td>Break C-Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(2)$^1$A''</td>
<td>25→27, 0.612</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5.211</td>
<td>42024.19</td>
<td>Break S-CH$_3$Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(3)$^3$A''</td>
<td>25→28, 0.646</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5.552</td>
<td>44774.19</td>
<td>Minimum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(3)$^1$A''</td>
<td>25→28, 0.684</td>
<td>0.0013</td>
<td>5.634</td>
<td>45435.48</td>
<td>Break S-CH$_3$Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(4)$^1$A''</td>
<td>25→30, 0.567</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5.922</td>
<td>47758.06</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(1)$^1$A'</td>
<td>25→29, 0.699</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6.175</td>
<td>49798.39</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(2)$^1$A'</td>
<td>25→29, 0.705</td>
<td>0.033</td>
<td>6.213</td>
<td>50104.84</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table 10.7: Computed vertical excitation energies ($\Delta$E$_{eq}$) and oscillator strengths ($f$) of some low-lying states of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl obtained at the TD-B3LYP/6-311++G**/B3LYP/6-311++G** level with the B3LYP/6-311++G** optimised geometry of the $X^1A'$ state of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl. Geometry optimisation was also performed on the six lowest excited states and they were all found to be dissociative apart from the (3)$^3$A'' state, with a computed
excitation energy of 5.552 eV (44,782 cm$^{-1}$). Comparison of Figure 10.1 with Table 10.7 indicates that excitations to the six excited states probably all contribute to the absorption spectrum shown in Figure 10.1.

The weak band centred at (34,500 ± 100) cm$^{-1}$ is assigned to the formally forbidden $(1)^3A'' ← \tilde{X}^1A'$ transition with a computed excitation energy of 4.647 eV (37,483 cm$^{-1}$). It presumably gains some intensity via spin-orbit interaction of the $(1)^3A''$ state with neighbouring $^1A''$ states.

The strong band centred at (42,800 ± 50) cm$^{-1}$ is assigned to the spin allowed transition $(3)^1A'' ← \tilde{X}^1A'$ with a computed vertical excitation energy of 5.634 eV (45,169 cm$^{-1}$) (computed oscillator strength, $f$, 0.0013). The experimental separation of these two bands is (8300 ± 150) cm$^{-1}$ compared to the computed separation of 7686 cm$^{-1}$. As shown in Table 10.7, the main contributors to the $(1)^3A'' ← \tilde{X}^1A'$ and the $(3)^1A'' ← \tilde{X}^1A'$ transitions are the one electron excitations from molecular orbitals 25 to 27 and 25 to 28 respectively. These are both excitations from an S3p non-bonding lone pair with some small C2p$\pi$ anti-bonding contributions to a delocalised $\sigma$ anti-bonding orbital.

It is also noted that in both cases the excited state, the $(1)^3A''$ state and the $(3)^1A''$ state, is dissociative in character with dissociation occurring by breaking the CH$_3$S-CH$_2$Cl bond (see Table 10.6). Other bands will contribute to the spectrum with the $(1)^1A'' ← \tilde{X}^1A'$ transition, with a computed vertical excitation energy of 5.031 eV (40,580 cm$^{-1}$) and a computed oscillator strength, $f$, 0.0001, being the most significant contributor (the main contributor to this excitation is the 25 $→$ 26 transition, see Table 10.7, which is from an S3p non-bonding lone pair, with small anti-bonding contributions, from C2p$\pi$ orbitals, to a delocalised $\sigma$ anti-bonding orbital).

The two bands observed in the absorption spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl have therefore been assigned on the basis of the TD-DFT calculations to valence-valence transitions. In order to estimate the position of the lower valence-Rydberg transitions in CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl, the first adiabatic ionisation energy (AIE) is required. The first band in the PE spectrum of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl is a sharp non-bonding type band with the adiabatic ionisation energy (AIE) equal to the vertical ionisation energy (VIE) at (9.17 ± 0.01) eV [13]. It corresponds to removal of an S3p lone pair electron. The lowest transitions to Rydberg orbitals are expected to be S3p $→$ 3d and S3p $→$ 4s transitions. As the quantum defects
of nd and ns Rydberg orbitals in atomic sulphur are ~0.3 and ~2.0 respectively [40, 41], the transition energies to the 3d and 4s Rydberg orbitals are expected at 58,913 cm⁻¹ and 46,532.7 cm⁻¹ respectively, calculated using equation 10.14 (see section 1.3 of Chapter 1),

\[ E_n = IE - \frac{R}{(n-\delta)^2} \]  \hspace{1cm} (10.14)

These transitions are above the region shown in Figure 10.1 (28,000 – 46,000 cm⁻¹) and are not expected to contribute to the spectrum in this region.

10.4 Conclusion

The u.v. absorption spectrum of CH₃SCH₂Cl has been recorded in the region 28,000 cm⁻¹ to 47,000 cm⁻¹ at four different pressures and reported for the first time. The infrared absorption spectrum was recorded of CH₃SCH₂Cl at five different pressures in the region 500 cm⁻¹ to 3500 cm⁻¹. Quantum chemical calculations have been used to assign the absorption bands observed in the UV and infrared spectra. The photolysis rate coefficient of CH₃SCH₂Cl in the atmosphere has been determined using photoabsorption cross-section measurements at ten different solar zenith angles. A photolysis rate coefficient of 7.83x10⁻⁵ s⁻¹, which yields a photolysis lifetime of ca. 3-4 hours, has been determined at 0° zenith at ground level in the atmosphere.

It has been shown in this work that photolysis of CH₃SCH₂Cl occurs at a much higher rate with respect to attack by OH radicals and reaction with Cl atoms in the atmosphere. The photolysis lifetime of CH₃SCH₂Cl is ca. 3-4 hours compared with a lifetime of 4.6 and 1.2 days with respect to reaction with OH and Cl respectively. It has also been shown using experimentally derived reaction energies, with supporting quantum chemical calculations, that the dominant photo-dissociation route of CH₃SCH₂Cl is breaking of the C-S bond to produce the products CH₃S and CH₂Cl. Both these results are of significant value as this strongly supports the hypothesis that if DMS and Cl₂ react to form CH₃SCH₂Cl at night, the CH₃SCH₂Cl formed is photolysed the following morning to produce CH₃S and CH₂Cl. CH₃S is then oxidised by O₃ and/or NO₂ in the atmosphere to form CH₃SO₂ which produces SO₂ from photolysis and/or from thermal decomposition during the day.
Photolysis of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl

References

Photolysis of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$


Photolysis of $\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl}$


Chapter 11

Conclusions and Future Work

During this research the main investigations carried out were: an investigation of the pyrolysis behaviour of two hydrofluorocarbon (HFC) fire suppression agents, 2-H heptafluoropropane (CF$_3$CHFCF$_3$) and pentafluoroethane (CF$_3$CHF$_2$) in order to determine their thermal decomposition pathways, a study of three ozone-alkene reactions (O$_3$ + ethene, O$_3$ + 2-methylpropene (2MP) and O$_3$ + 2, 3 dimethyl-2-butene (DMB)) in order to measure their product branching ratios, a feasibility study of the TPE spectra of the first bands of four selected triatoms, (SF$_2$, HO$_2$, HOCl and Cl$_2$O), and determination of the photolysis rate coefficient in the u.v. visible region of the atmospherically important molecule monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl). The first three investigations were carried out using photoelectron spectroscopy, whereas the fourth investigation was carried out with u.v. absorption spectroscopy.

The results obtained from monitoring the pyrolysis products of flowing CF$_3$CHF$_2$, diluted with argon, as a function of temperature, have been interpreted in terms of two main thermal decomposition reactions,

\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{F}_4 + \text{HF} \quad (11.1a)
\]

\[
\text{C}_2\text{F}_4 \rightarrow 2\text{CF}_2 \quad (11.1b)
\]

and

\[
\text{CF}_3\text{CHF}_2 \rightarrow \text{CF}_2 + \text{CF}_3\text{H} \quad (11.2)
\]
as well as the reaction, $C_2F_4 \rightarrow 2CF_2$. A study of the pyrolysis products of $CF_3CHFCF_3$, diluted in argon, as a function of temperature, have also been interpreted in terms of two main thermal decomposition reactions,

$$CF_3CHFCF_3 \rightarrow CF_3CF=CF_2 + HF \quad (11.3)$$

and

$$CF_3CHFCF_3 \rightarrow C_2F_4 + CF_3H \quad (11.4)$$
as well as the reaction $CF_3CF=CF_2 \rightarrow C_2F_4 + CF_2$. PE spectra of $CF_3CHF_2$ and $CF_3CHFCF_3$ were each assigned using state-of-the-art $ab$ $initio$ calculations.

Comparison of the PE spectrum of $CF_3CHF_2$ with the published TPE spectrum [1] showed good agreement for the first band but the higher energy bands appear less well resolved in the TPE spectrum. The PE spectrum of $CF_3CHFCF_3$ was also compared with the corresponding TPE spectrum [2] and showed that the first band seen in the TPE spectrum was a lot weaker than that observed in the PE spectrum, and the higher energy bands (above 13.5 eV) appeared to be less well resolved in the TPE spectrum. The apparent loss of resolution observed in the TPE spectra in the higher energy regions for both $CF_3CHF_2$ and $CF_3CHFCF_3$ is due to autoionisation from high-lying Rydberg states which converge to higher ionisation thresholds (see Chapters 5 and 6).

Three ozone-alkene reactions were studied ($O_3 +$ ethene, $O_3 + 2MP$ and $O_3 + DMB$) using a glass flow-tube interfaced to a PE spectrometer, and the reagents and products were monitored as a function of reaction time. PE band intensities for the reactants and observed products were converted to partial pressures using measured photoionisation cross-sections. These experiments allowed the determination of all the main product yields from each reaction by the same experimental technique for the first time.

The experimental product yields measured for each reaction agreed reasonably well when compared to those measured in other studies [3-13]. For $O_3 +$ ethene, the observed products were $H_2CO$, $CO$, $CO_2$, HCOOH, $CH_3CHO$ and $O_2$. For the reactions $O_3 + 2MP$ and $O_3 + DMB$, $H_2CO$, $CO$, $CO_2$, $(CH_3)_2CO$ and $O_2$ were observed as reaction products. HCOOH was observed from the $O_3 + 2MP$ reaction but not from the $O_3 + DMB$ reaction. The yield of $O_2$, (a main reaction product observed in all three alkene-ozone reactions studied), was measured for the first time for these reactions. Methyl acetate
(CH₃COOCH₃) was not observed in the spectra recorded for the O₃ + 2MP and the O₃ + DMB reactions, indicating that, as in the well known, the “ester channel” [14] for decomposition of the Criegee intermediate, (CH₃)₂COO → CH₃COOCH₃, is not occurring, although from the results obtained for O₃ + 2MP and O₃ + ethene, it appears that the smaller Criegee intermediate, H₂COO, rearranges to give HCOOH. For each reaction kinetic simulations were used to identify the main production reaction (or reactions) associated with each observed product and the measured product yields were used in a global model to calculate the annual global emissions of the observed products in the atmosphere.

A plan to record TPE spectra of SF₂, HO₂, HOCl and Cl₂O at the Elettra synchrotron facility was only partially successful. Preliminary TPE spectra were obtained for SF₂ and HO₂, but no attempts were made to record the TPE spectra of HOCl and Cl₂O because initial PE experiments performed at Elettra showed that the source used for producing HOCl and Cl₂O was not sufficiently stable to allow TPE spectra to be recorded. PES experiments have since been performed in Southampton to develop sufficiently stable sources of HOCl and Cl₂O for subsequent synchrotron TPES measurements. This involved flowing Cl₂ saturated in H₂O vapour through successive layers of dried HgO powder in a column attached to the inlet of a PE spectrometer. The recommended methods for producing HOCl and Cl₂O for TPES measurements at the Elettra synchrotron source have been described (Chapter 9). The methods developed in this work will provide a good starting point for recording TPE spectra of HOCl and Cl₂O at Elettra, which is the next step in this project.

TPE spectra were recorded at Elettra for the triatomic molecules HO₂ and SF₂. However, problems occurred in both experiments. Vapour pressure fluctuations, arising from a heating mantle with poor temperature control, prevented stable conditions needed to record TPE spectra of HO₂ and because the reaction chosen to produce SF₂ also produces S atoms, which recombined to make S₂, the first TPE band of SF₂ contained contributions from the first band of S₂.

The photolysis rate coefficient of atmospherically important molecule monochlorodimethyl sulphide (CH₃SCH₂Cl) was investigated as an extension of the work performed for the reactions of dimethyl sulphide (DMS) plus Cl₂ and DMS plus OH (see Chapter 10) [15, 16, 17]. The absorption spectrum of CH₃SCH₂Cl was
recorded and reported in this work for the first time. Photoabsorption cross-sections were measured for recorded absorption spectra at different pressures and were used along with solar actinic flux values to determine the photolysis rate coefficient of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl at various solar zenith angles. It was found that of the three removal routes for CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl in the atmosphere (CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl + OH, CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl + Cl and photolysis of CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl) that photolysis was the dominant removal route with CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl having a photolysis rate coefficient of 7.83x10^{-5} s$^{-1}$, which yields a photolysis lifetime of ca. 3-4 hours (at 0° zenith at ground level in the atmosphere) compared to attack by OH and reaction with Cl atoms with expected reaction lifetimes of 4.6 and 1.2 days respectively. Quantum chemical calculations were performed of the photo-dissociation channel,

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{Cl} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S} + \text{CH}_2\text{Cl}
\]  

(11.5) to determine reaction energies for each channel. It was found that the photolysis channel (11.5) had the lowest computed $\Delta H_{f,298K}^{\theta}$ of 69.50 kcal.mol$^{-1}$ and had a band onset of (28,000 $\pm$ 100) cm$^{-1}$, (80.06 $\pm$ 0.15) kcal.mol$^{-1}$, which was above the expected dissociation energy of (70.15 $\pm$ 2.2) kcal.mol$^{-1}$. From these results it can be concluded that the dominant removal route for CH$_3$SCH$_2$Cl in the atmosphere is photolysis with CH$_3$S and CH$_2$Cl being the favoured products formed.

### 11.1 Future Work

The results obtained in this work demonstrate that a number of valuable experiments could be performed in future.

During the pyrolysis of HFCs it was noted that the experimental first VIE of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ is lower than the computed first VIE by 0.3 eV. This was explained in terms of dissociation of CF$_3$CHF$_2^+$ in the vertical ionisation region from the neutral. The recommended first AIE of CF$_3$CHF$_2$ is also 0.5 eV below the measured band onset in both the PE and TPE spectra. A more reliable experimental determination of this AIE could be achieved by recording a high-resolution zero-electron kinetic energy pulsed field ionisation (ZEKE-PFI) spectrum of this molecule by a two-colour process involving initial excitation to an excited state with an equilibrium geometry closer to that of the ion than that of the neutral ground state [18]. The structure obtained in the ZEKE-PFI first band should also enable an understanding of the ionic state dissociation
to be obtained. An extension of the pyrolysis work described in Chapters 5 and 6 would be to study the reactive intermediates, CHF, CH₂F, CHF₂, CH₃CF, CF₃CF and CFCHF by PES, TPES and ZEKE-PFI spectroscopy to determine their first ionisation energies and investigate their low lying ionic states.

As noted in Chapter 9, in order to record the TPE spectrum of HO₂ in the region 10.5-13.5 eV, the experiment needs to be carried out with an accurate temperature control on the heating system used to heat the urea-hydrogen peroxide complex in order to maintain a constant vapour pressure of H₂O₂. The aim is to resolve vibrational structure in the HO₂ first PE band and to obtain a vibrationally resolved spectrum of the second band which is expected to have its first component in the 11.5 eV to 12.0 eV ionisation energy region.

From the SF₂ investigation described in Chapter 9, good agreement was observed between the AIE and VIE values for the first TPE band, obtained in the present work, with results of state-of-the-art ab initio calculations. The vibrational constant ($\omega_e$) for the symmetric stretching mode in the ground ionic state, derived from the vibrationally resolved TPE spectra, was also in good agreement with the value calculated by Lee et al. (using the RCCSD(T) method with basis sets up to aug-cc-pV(5+d)Z quality) [19]. Unfortunately, the presence of an S₂ vibrational progression, arising from autoionisation of S₂, in the TPE first band of SF₂, prevented the observation of any additional structure, and although better resolution was achieved with respect to previous experimental work, it was not possible to obtain more information from the SF₂ spectra. For this reason, another experimental approach is currently being investigated to produce SF₂. This involves discharging either flowing SF₄ or SF₆ heavily diluted in argon in an attempt to make SF₂ with minimal S₂ production. In collaborative experiments with the Southampton PES group, the method of discharging flowing SF₆ diluted in argon has been tested in Elettra by Dr S. Stranges (University of Rome) with encouraging results obtained from recorded PE spectra.

An improvement to the synchrotron PE spectrometer is currently being carried out by the Southampton PES group in collaboration with Dr S. Stranges and Dr G. Cautero at Elettra. This involves replacing the channeltron electron detector with a 2D position sensitive detector. This will allow PE and TPE spectra to be recorded at shorter times with improved signal-to-noise ratios [20].
Conclusions and Future Work

As well as future projects which arise from this work, a number of longer term developments can be anticipated. For example, a common problem when studying the photoelectron spectra of reactive intermediates is that of overlapping bands produced by different species present in the ionisation region e.g. the photoelectron spectrum recorded for Cl₂O in Figure 9.7 (Chapter 9) shows the overlap between the second bands of HOCl (VIE 12.29 eV) and Cl₂O (VIE 12.37 eV). If the electrons and ions produced in a photoionisation event can be correlated, then the PE signal attributed to each species present in the mixture can be separated and the overlapping band problem can be avoided. This would mean incorporation of an ion detector, such as a time-of-flight mass analyser. Suitably timed extraction voltages would be needed to allow Photoelectron-Photoion-Coincidence (PEPICO) measurements to be performed.

Threshold Photoelectron-Photoion-Coincidence (TPEPICO) experiments could also be performed and these are likely to have higher signal-to-noise ratios for reactive intermediates than PEPICO experiments because of the high collection efficiency of the threshold method [21]. This technique has been successfully used by Alcaraz et al. and Ueda et al. [22, 23]. Alcaraz et al. recorded TPE spectra of the methyl radical (CH₃) and its deuterated isotopomers CH₂D, CHD₂ and CD₃ produced at the same time in the same reaction mixture from flash pyrolysis of CHₓDᵧONO (where x + y = 3) in the energy region 9.5 - 10.5 eV. From TPE spectra of each isotopomer the ground ionic states of CH₃, CH₂D, CHD₂ and CD₃ were investigated and resonant autoionisation process were studied. An example of a reactive intermediate which could be studied using this technique, relevant to the work described in Chapters 7 and 8, is the Criegee intermediate, CH₂OO. This could be made for initial study with PES and then more detailed study by TPES from the following reactions,

\[ \text{F} + \text{CH}_3\text{OCH}_3 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OCH}_2 + \text{HF} \]  \hspace{1cm} (11.5)

\[ \text{O}_2 + \text{CH}_2\text{OCH}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{CH}_2\text{OO} \]  \hspace{1cm} (11.6)

Reaction (11.5) has been used to study CH₃OCH₂ by PES [24]. Another method which could be used to produce the Criegee intermediate for PES and TPES study is that used by Taatjes et al. [25];

\[ \text{Cl} + (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{SO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S(O)CH}_2 + \text{HCl} \]  \hspace{1cm} (11.7)

\[ \text{O}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{S(O)CH}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SO} + \text{CH}_2\text{OO} \]  \hspace{1cm} (11.8)
This was the first gas-phase study of this radical (by photoionisation mass spectrometry). Clearly TPEPICO studies would be very valuable here to obtain a clean TPE spectrum of CH$_2$OO, (it should be noted that CH$_2$S, a possible by-product of the above reactions, has the same mass as CH$_2$OO). Once CH$_2$OO has been studied by TPEPICO spectroscopy other Criegee intermediates could be studied in this way. Other small reactive intermediates such as HONO (AIE 10.97 ± 0.03 eV) [26], CH$_3$O$_2$ (AIE 10.33 ± 0.05 eV) [25, 27, 28] and C$_2$H$_5$O$_2$ (AIE 9.61 ± 0.08 eV) [28, 29, 30, 31] are possibilities for future PE and TPE work.

Initial experiments were made to prepare CH$_3$O$_2$ for PES study in this work from the reactions,

$$\text{CH}_4 + \text{F} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{HF} \quad (11.9)$$
$$\text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_2 + M \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + M \quad (11.10)$$

The experimental setup needed for reaction (11.9), to produce F atoms, involved discharging 5% F$_2$ in helium. This was achieved by using the same experimental setup as that described in section 3.2.1 of Chapter 3 (as used in the SF$_2$ investigation) which involved using an open-ended inlet system. The first step of this experiment was to optimise the conditions used to produce CH$_3$ from reaction (11.9) by determining the optimum reactant partial pressures of CH$_4$ and F$_2$, as a function of mixing distance, needed to provide high number densities of CH$_3$ in the flow-tube i.e. to optimise conditions to allow CH$_3$O$_2$ production from the secondary reaction of CH$_3$ with O$_2$. Preliminary results of the first reaction step of this experiment were encouraging, producing relatively high yields of CH$_3$.

The optimised conditions for producing CH$_3$ were found to use a 1.5:1 ratio of F$_2$:CH$_4$ ($\Delta p$ F$_2$ 6.2x10$^{-5}$ mbar and $\Delta p$ CH$_4$ 4.1x10$^{-5}$ mbar) at a reaction mixing distance of 6mm from the point of ionisation. Attempts at making CH$_3$O$_2$ from reaction (11.10), by the addition of O$_2$ to the reaction mixture proved to be less successful. Once an intense first PE band of CH$_3$ was observed, O$_2$ was slowly admitted to the top of the movable injector along with CH$_4$ using a T-piece. However, CH$_3$O$_2$ was never observed from recorded PE spectra in this work (only CH$_3$ and O$_2$ were observed along with the reactants CH$_4$ and F/F$_2$). One reason that CH$_3$O$_2$ was not observed may be because O$_2$ was admitted via the top of the injector along with CH$_4$ and not at the point where CH$_3$
was produced (at the bottom of the injector). In a previous flow-tube investigation by Bacak et al. [27], chemical ionisation mass spectrometry (CIMS) was used to determine the rate coefficient for the reaction CH$_3$O$_2$ + NO → Products. In this study, reactions (11.9) and (11.10) were used to successfully produce CH$_3$O$_2$. The flow-tube used was very similar in design to that described in section 3.22 of Chapter 3. However it contained two additional inlets on the side arm (equivalent in position to inlet a shown Figure 3.7).

A microwave cavity was attached to the side arm to produce F atoms, with CH$_4$ being admitted via the first inlet to produce CH$_3$. The second inlet, positioned downstream of the first, meant that O$_2$ could be admitted directly at the point where CH$_3$ was produced, maximising the production of CH$_3$O$_2$ from reaction (11.10). Concentrations of CH$_3$O$_2$ obtained in this way were of the order 1-10x10$^{10}$ molecules cm$^{-3}$ [27].

A PE spectrum obtained from reaction (11.9), with added O$_2$, from this work is shown in Figure 11.1. It shows the bands of CH$_3$ (VIE 9.84 eV) [32], CH$_4$ (VIE 13.60 eV) [33], F$_2$ (VIE 15.70 eV) [34] and F (VIE 17.42 eV) [35] along with the He(I)$\alpha$ and He(I)$\beta$ bands of the first PE band of O$_2$ (red). The arrow, shown in blue, is the expected position of the first PE band of CH$_3$O$_2$ (AIE 10.33 ± 0.05 eV) [25]. CH$_3$O$_2$ is not observed in this spectrum because of insufficient mixing between CH$_3$ and O$_2$. Also, as reaction (11.10) is a third body reaction, ($k = 4.49 \times 10^{-31}$ cm$^6$.molecules$^{-2}$ s$^{-1}$) [36] the pressures need to be increased to increase the yield of CH$_3$O$_2$.

Possible modifications to the experimental set-up would be to try and improve the reaction efficiency in order to maximise the CH$_3$ production by providing improved mixing at the outlet of the injector. One way to do this would be to use a “tubuliser”, like that described in reference [27], positioned at the end of the moveable injector. This would provide efficient mixing at short mixing distances and help to minimise secondary reactions. Also the use of an inlet with a tapered end and a smaller hole, like those used for the O$_3$ + alkene experiments described in Chapters 7 and 8, would allow greater local pressures and more collisions between CH$_3$ and O$_2$ to occur.

Recent studies by the Southampton PES group have carried out in depth investigations into reactions of the atmospherically important molecule dimethyl sulphide (DMS, CH$_3$SCH$_3$) with the molecular halogens Cl$_2$, Br$_2$, BrCl and ICl using PES and IR matrix isolation techniques (see Chapter 10) [15, 16, 37, 38].
Conclusions and Future Work

A logical extension of this work (and that of Chapter 10) would be to carry out a flow-tube investigation of these reactions in order to measure the photoionisation cross-sections of the reactants and observed products to ultimately measure reaction branching ratios using the method described in Chapters 7 and 8. Future experiments, including reactions of CH₃SCH₃ (and possibly other sulphur containing species such as CH₃S(O)CH₃ and (CH₃)₂SO₂) with reactive species present in the marine boundary layer (MBL) such as OH, NO₃ and IO may also be considered for such an investigation. A reaction of particular interest is OH with CH₃SCH₃, as this is the main oxidation reaction of CH₃SCH₃ in the atmosphere during the day. Two reaction channels are possible,

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S(OH)CH}_3 \]  \hspace{1cm} (11.11)

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \] \hspace{1cm} (11.12)

The overall room temperature rate coefficient for \( \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{Products} \) has been measured as \( 5.38 \times 10^{-12} \text{ cm}^3\cdot\text{molecules}^{-1}\cdot\text{s}^{-1} \) [39]. However, no complete branching ratio data of the possible reaction channels (11.11) and (11.12) have been determined for this
reaction. Also, oxidation of CH₃SCH₃ in the atmosphere occurs at night via the reaction CH₃SCH₃ with O₃/NO₃. This reaction has an estimated room temperature rate coefficient of 9.7 x 10⁻¹³ cm³.molecules⁻¹.s⁻¹ [40] and may occur via the two channels,

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 + \text{NO}_3 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2 + \text{HNO}_3 \quad (11.13)
\]

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 + \text{NO}_3 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S}((\text{NO}_3)\text{CH}_3) \quad (11.14)
\]

PES could be used to observe the products of both reactions and hence estimate the reaction branching ratios. Currently, photoabsorption cross-sections and photolysis rate coefficients obtained in this work from absorption measurements of CH₃SCH₂Cl (Chapter 10) are being used in atmospheric kinetics simulations and global models involving CH₃SCH₃ reactions with Cl₂, Cl and OH to predict the estimated annual SO₂ global budget and determine atmospheric mixing ratios of CH₃SCH₃ and SO₂ at the marine boundary layer (MBL). Reaction branching ratio data of CH₃SCH₃ reactions would be of use in order to improve such models.
Conclusions and Future Work

References

Conclusions and Future Work


Conclusions and Future Work


